



ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT

UNDER SATAN

VERSUS

**THE
ETERNAL
KINGDOM OF GOD**

By
Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

Not to be Sold

**One World Government
Under Satan
versus
The Eternal Kingdom
of God**

**By
Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier**

**Founder and President
of
Christian Literature and Bible Center Inc.**

Not to be Sold

Table of Contents

Preface	i
Forward	iii
Memorial and Dedication	iii
CHAPTER ONE: INTRODUCTION	1
A. The first sin and it's results	1
B. The first promise and God's assurance	5
C. The first provision by God's grace.	7
Questions	11
CHAPTER TWO: SATAN'S USURPED DOMAIN	12
A. This planet earth	12
B. Satan's counterfeits will be accepted	20
C. Satan's power	24
Questions	35
CHAPTER THREE: SATAN'S AIM	37
A. To disrupt God's plans	37
B. To establish a one world government	44
C. To destroy the messianic hope	53
Questions	67
CHAPTER FOUR: GOD'S PROTECTING POWER	69
A. The Messianic promise	70
B. The Messianic provision	73
C. The Messianic results	77
Questions	84
CHAPTER FIVE: THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED	85
A. The Battle of Armageddon	93
B. The cleansing for the Kingdom	97
C. The Kingdom of Righteousness established	99
Questions	126

(Table of Contents Cont.)

CHAPTER SIX: THE FINAL BATTLE AGAINST GOD	128
A. Satan will be loosed from the bottomless pit	131
B. Satan's deception among the nations	132
C. Satan's kingdom will be destroyed forever	134
Questions	149
CHAPTER SEVEN: THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH	151
A. The Final Judgement at the Great White Throne	153
B. The final destruction of the first heavens and earth	155
C. All things will be eternally made new	158
Questions	171

PREFACE

With the world situation as it is today, this study in escatology is of the utmost importance. As Christians, we need to be very observant of the signs of the time in relationship to the revelation in the Bible. We do not set any dates as to just when certain events recorded in the Bible, will take place, but we should be aware of the signs of the time. God has recorded many things that will happen in these last days, and it behooves us to take note and diligently study the Word of God, being approved by God. The Lord expects each of us to be students of His Word, and be ready for that great "Air Lift", when we will be taken out from the wrath to come. "And to wait for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus, who delivered us from the wrath to come." 1 Thess.1:10.

In this Bible study, we will be dealing with the coming of the one world Government under Satan, the wrath of God, the millennium thousand year kingdom of righteousness and the eternal kingdom of God. The whole world system is under the power of Satan who is declared in the Bible as "The god of this age". "In whom the god of this age hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them." 2 Cor.4:4. However we must always remember that Almighty God is sovereign over all and Satan and his billions of demons can only act according to the permissive will of the Living God. As we study the conditions of this world system in the light of the Bible, may we also be assured from the Word of God that God has prepared an everlasting kingdom of righteousness. God is allowing iniquity to run its complete course, even though it was judged at the cross. Study these lessons carefully and remember that God through His Word has promised to bring in everlasting righteousness. "To finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy." Dan.9:24b. This one verse from the Book of Daniel gives us the clue to God's marvelous plan of salvation. In the New Heavens and the New Earth, which has been promised by God, there will be no more sin and the ungodly will be gone forever, being cast into the everlasting lake of fire. This will be an everlasting living death never to show its ugly appearance again! May God grant each of us a clear understanding of these last days, in the light of the Bible.

As I present this timely study to you, Dear Students, I do it from the basis of THE WORD OF GOD. Volumes have been written as to the history of empires and nation's revolutions, coups, liberalism, humanism, and of late we have a new angle of the world's approach and that is "Progressivism". The world conditions are ripe for Satan to ask the same question as he had asked Eve, "Hath God said?" Satan and his billions of demons, have a plan, and God in His Omniscience is aware of every thought that these evil forces have, with their desire for a "One World Government", under their control. This conflict started with Satan and his fallen angels, and now it has brushed off onto the ungodly "Homo Sapiens." This concept amounts to, the creature challenging the Creator. God, who knows the end from the beginning has made all necessary preparations to counteract every move of Satan and his demons, as well as the human trend of events of all time. There is nothing hidden from our Almighty God, who knows the end from the very beginning. Our Living God is allowing sin to run its complete course, even though total sin was judged at the cross.

In this Biblical textbook, I have not tried to consider all of the details from the Bible, but have chosen out some of the very important issues to be thoroughly studied. I expect every student to do more research on these issues as you use this textbook in your classes. God the Holy Spirit has been very close to me as He has guided me thus far in preparing these Biblical teachings. "But by the grace of God I am what I am; and His grace, which was bestowed upon me, was not in vain, but I labored more abundantly than they all; yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me." 1 Cor.15:10. I thank God for the high calling in Christ Jesus, who has allowed me to continue on in the teaching ministry, even though I have passed the normal life span. Having accepted Christ as my personal Savior in 1920, I have grown in knowledge and that knowledge has been transformed into wisdom by God the Holy Spirit, and that by the grace of God. The Lord has had great patience with me as I often was very impetuous. At times I have wept bitterly over many difficult affairs that have crossed my path. I have stumbled and faltered along the way, sometimes going ahead of God's plans for my life, and other times I have hesitated to do God's will. I have seen hundreds of precious souls accept Christ as their personal Savior. I have had many disappointments on the mission field, with discord among the brethren, which taught me to lean heavily upon the everlasting arms of Almighty God. Dear students of the Word of God, keep your eyes upon the Lord and look into the pages of His precious Book for a continual understanding of the perfect will of God.! What ever the Lord calls you to do, do it thoroughly unto the Lord, knowing that your efforts in the Lord are eternal. "Be not deceived, God is not mocked, for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. And let us not be weary in well doing; for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. As we have, therefore, opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith." Gal.6:7-10.

Rev. Dr. Andrew J.Losier
Founder and President
of
Christian Literature & Bible Center Inc.,

FOREWORD

We are living in very immoral days and we are reminded of the days of the "Tower of Babel", when totally depraved mankind was desirous to make a name for himself. It takes us to what the Bible says. "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness, because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shown it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse; Because, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man, and birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore, God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen." Rom.1:18-25.

The battle continues between light and darkness, right and wrong, righteousness and unrighteousness, good and evil, and God Satan. This Biblical textbook is written to encourage believers throughout the world to, "Watch, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong. Let all your things be done with love." 1 Cor.16:13-14.

MEMORIAL AND DEDICATION

It has been my privilege and honor to have been in close Christian fellowship with many of the Jonas Sprunger family of Berne, Indiana. As I was preparing to go to the mission field in 1938, I received great help and encouragement from Uncle Jonas and Aunt Zilla, and members of their family. The depression had taken its toll and no regular support was forth coming, for the first seven years on the mission field. However, the call from God came clear and sure, and there was no hesitation or stopping preparations, answering the great commission. The call is always, "Go Tell" the glorious gospel message.

Recently, after 43 years in Africa, I have had some wonderful visits with Verne and Katie Sprunger, as we stopped, enroute to Berne. I was led of the Lord to ask Verne to prepare a foreword to this present textbook. I appreciate it that he has accepted this request in behalf of and in memory of his wonderful parents. I thank God for the rich memories that I have of the Jonas Sprunger family and I take this opportunity of introducing you to the Jonas Sprunger family through Verne and Katie Sprunger.

Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

IN MEMORY OF UNCLE JONAS AND AUNT ZILLA SPRUNGER

This textbook is being dedicated to the memory of my parents, Mr. & Mrs. Jonas Sprunger, who were the uncle and Aunt of Mrs. Dorothy L. Losier.

Uncle Jonas (deceased 1977) and Aunt Zilla (deceased 1971) lived on a farm near Berne, Indiana. They were the parents of nine children, two of which are deceased. Lorea drowned in a livestock tank at the age of two and the second oldest son, Lowell passed away in 1992. Lowell was a graduate of Wheaton College and was a room-mate of Dr. Losier.

"Andy" and Lowell made frequent visits to our home on the farm and I remember many great times during these visits, though I was quite young. Andy was considered as one of the family and gladly pitched in with chores to be done on the farm.

There was additional incentive for Andy's visits to Berne, Indiana, as this was also the home of a young lady, Dorothy Lehman, my cousin, also a student at Wheaton College. Andy took special interest in Dorothy and this relationship blossomed, leading to their marriage, following Andy's Dallas Theological Seminary training in 1937. The marriage was performed by Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer, the founder and President of Dallas Theological Seminary.

Andy's college and seminary years occurred during the great depression and times were difficult for everyone. I recall times when Andy and my brother, Lowell, would pack up non perishable food items from the farm for their use at Wheaton College.

Andy was an example of a Christian with great faith, right from the beginning. Striking examples of faith exhibited by both Andy and Dorothy Losier can be found in Dr. Losier's book, "Memoirs of Africa".

Uncle Jonas and Aunt Zilla Sprunger were dedicated Christians and faithful members of the First Mennonite Church of Berne, Indiana, until the Lord called them to their heavenly home. They were a continuous source of encouragement and support for Andy and Dorothy Losier throughout their ministry. Were they still living, they would be thrilled with the current ministry of Dr. Losier and the Christian Literature and Bible Center Inc. They were especially interested in the study of prophecy and eschatology, which is the subject of this textbook, "One World Government under Satan, versus The Eternal Kingdom of God." Therefore it is very fitting that this textbook be dedicated and in memory of Uncle Jonas and Aunt Zilla, my beloved parents.

Verne Sprunger,

Teacher of the Seekers Bible Class,
Tri-County Baptist Church,
West Chester, Ohio. U.S.America.

CHAPTER ONE



INTRODUCTION

CHAPTER ONE

INTRODUCTION

A. THE FIRST SIN AND ITS RESULTS

As human beings we are prone to think of the first sin occurring in the garden of Eden, but this is not according to the Scripture. The first sin occurred in the heavenlies and in the realm of the spirits. In other words, the first sin was committed in Heaven among the angels of God. We have previously dealt with this issue in other writings but we need to repeat it for very important Biblical information. It first occurred with the greatest angel that God had created. This angel was call Lucifer. He enjoyed the highest position among the angelic hosts. He had an army of angels at his command, as the anointed cherub. (Ezek.28:14. There were none in heaven or upon earth as great a creature as Lucifer, who was full of all wisdom and his beauty excelled all. He had great respect among all of the angels as the chief guard at the border of God's private abode.

LUCIFER

Lucifer was among the chosen cherubim and was given the responsibility to protect the privacy of Almighty God. He was as it were, in charge with a great angelic army, to protect along the border of the privacy of the Triune God. "Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth, and I have set thee so; thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. **Thou wast perfect in thy ways** from the day that thou wast created, **till iniquity was found in thee.**" Ezek. 28:14-15. He no doubt had a large army of the angelic host under his command and was very powerful. We must also remember as the Bible says, he was created by God as being perfect in all of his ways, until sin was found in his life. (Ezek.28:15.) In this portion which was revealed to Ezekiel by the Holy Spirit, we see a comparison with the King of Tyre. However as we read through this section, keeping it in its context, we learn that this description refers to someone who was in the garden of Eden. That, we know was none other than Satan who indwelt the serpent, and also was called the devil. Lucifer was the greatest creature God created and here we have a description of him. "Thus saith the Lord God: Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect beauty. Thou hast been in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold; the workmanship of thy timbrels and of thy flutes was prepared in thee in the day that thou was created." Ezek.28:12b-13. God created Lucifer a dynamic angel with a superb personality, above his fellow angels. He had to be very convincing and persuasive, among all of the angelic hosts, when he could convince one third of all of the heavenly angels to follow him. (Rev.12:4.) The angels as mankind were given the freedom of choice, and one third of God's holy angels were deceived by lucifer making the wrong choice and became fallen angels or demons. We do not know the exact number of these fallen angels, but they must number in the billions.

When sin took over in Lucifer's life, he lost his position before God, but retained his power, under the sovereignty of God. In order to replace Lucifer in the presence of God, it took four angelic creatures to take the responsibility that once was given to Lucifer. "And before the throne there was a sea of glass like crystal; and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four living creatures full of eyes in front and behind. And the first living creature was like a lion, and the second living creature like a calf, and the third living creature had a face like a man, and the fourth living creature was like a flying eagle. And the four living creatures had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within; and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, who was, and is, and is to come. And when these living creatures gave glory and honor and thanks to Him that is seated on the throne, who liveth forever and ever, the four and twenty elders fall down before Him that is seated on the throne, and worship Him that liveth forever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power; for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created." Rev.4:6-11. These four living creatures are the angels who replaced Lucifer as God's Border guards. They were equipped with very great swiftness and alertness with all seeing eyes. They are the four angelic creatures in the presence of God.

We must now turn to the Book of Isaiah to find out how Lucifer sinned against his Creator. The first verse is a prophetic utterance that will take place during the second half of the tribulation. (Rev.9:1; Rev.12:7-17.) "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, who didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart,

I will ascend into heaven,

I will exalt my throne above the stars of God;

I will sit also among the mount of the congregation, in the midst of the north,

I will ascend above the heights of the clouds,

I will be like the Most High." Isa.14:12-14.

Here we have the five "I Wills" of Lucifer, not denying the existence of God, but desiring to be equal with God. Lucifer was not content with the high position that God had given him, but desired to be like God. He was given so much power, being full of all wisdom and with an outstanding personality, he had high aspirations for himself. But God, in His omniscience was aware of every thought and intent of Lucifer and said, "Yet thou shalt be brought down to sheol, to the sides of the pit." Isa.14:15. Lucifer became Satan, that devil and in due time he will receive his ultimate judgement from His Creator. God also said, "By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned; therefore, I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God, and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Thine heart was lifted up because of thy beauty;

thou hast corrupted thy wisdom by reason of thy brightness; **I will cast thee to the ground, I will lay thee before kings,** that they may behold thee. Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy merchandise; therefore **will I bring forth a fire from the midst of thee;** it shall devour thee, and **I will bring thee to ashes upon earth** in the sight of all them that behold thee." Ezek.28:16-18. Lucifer's name was changed to Satan and the devil and his position was taken from him, but his power was retained under the sovereignty of God. Lucifer had his "I Wills", but God also had His "I Wills", and these will be completely fulfilled in God's own time. Satan's judgement was completed at the cross, and in God's own time, he and all his demons will be cast into the lake of fire, and remain there forever and ever.

Lucifer not only lost his high position before God, his Creator, but became the arch enemy, with a battle that will continue until after the millennium. Lucifer, that devil was not only defying God, but also recruited angels to help him set up his new kingdom of darkness. We have dealt with that issue in chapter two. We know that he was very persuasive among the angels, as he drew one third of God's billions of angels to follow his deceitful and cunning devices. He also prophetically is described as pursuing after Israel to destroy the Christ child." And there appeared a great wonder in heaven - a woman (Israel) clothed with the sun (Jacob) and the moon under her feet (Jacob's wife), and upon her head a crown of twelve stars (The twelve tribes of Israel). And she, being with child (The Christ Child), cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven and did cast them to the earth; and the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to be delivered, to devour her child as soon as it was born." Rev.12:1-4.

Lucifer was powerful to convince billions of angels which became fallen angels or demons, and was still powerful at the birth of the Christ child, and will be powerful during the "abomination of Desolation" when he makes his final stand upon planet earth. I mention this for your understanding that Satan is alive and very active as the god of this world system. (2 Cor.4:4.)

SIN INVADES PLANET EARTH

Regardless of the race or color of all human beings who live upon planet earth, we all have derived our posterity from Adam and Eve. This truth from the Bible was not believed by many of the scientists, but they finally discovered that all human beings have come from one and the same source. The majority of these scientists do not accept the authority of the Bible, but regardless of their opinion of the Bible, it remains scientifically correct and is the Word of God. The unsaved person cannot accept the authority of the Bible.

God created mankind in His own likeness. "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them." Gen.1:26-27. AS God created the angels with a volition, so He created mankind with a choice, rather than an animal instinct. Satan was aware of this freedom of choice and so he invades planet earth by indwelling one of the most beautiful creatures found in the garden of Eden. Being full of all

wisdom, he approached Eve in a very subtle way. "Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We shall eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden; But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die." Gen.3:1-4. It was clearly explained to Eve by Adam and he added, "Don't even touch that tree"!

Now the serpent who was indwelt by the Devil, spoke a grain of truth and a subtle lie. "And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die; For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as God, knowing good and evil." Gen.3:4-5. Eve took of the fruit and did not immediately die physically, but spiritually she died immediately, and her eyes were opened to good and evil and immediately she enticed Adam with the forbidden fruit and he also died spiritually. Of course eventually they both died physically. This is God's record of sin intruding into this planet earth. But in His omniscience, He is aware of everything that ever will happen. Nothing is hidden from our Almighty God. Most difficult questions that we have concerning God's personality, God's power and God's purpose, can be cleared up, if we will take time in our study of the Bible. If you reject these truths as set forth in the Bible, you will have endless trouble in understanding the great plan of God.

SIN HAS BEEN DEALT WITH AT THE CROSS

God has dealt with the sum total of all sin at the cross, and is waiting for the fullness of His time, until every declaration in the Bible is complete. The key verse in the Bible gives us the ultimate aim of Almighty God, which I refer to constantly in all of my teachings. (Dan.9:24.) God is allowing sin to run its complete course, being fully judged at the cross, so that it will never occur again in His new creation. God has used the form of a human person as the means of sacrifice, sending His own Eternal Son in the likeness of man apart from sin. That incarnate body of the Lord was prepared before the foundation of the world for that very purpose. Through the sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ, we as human persons are given the privilege of becoming members of the Royal family of God, by accepting God's provision to remove the sin barrier. Christ, as the Lamb of God, has taken away the sins of the whole world, and one day in our glorified bodies we will be free from even the thought of sin, forever and ever. Sin has contaminated the whole realm of God and it takes God's almighty power to remove it. God has His time period all set for the final count down against the evil forces and the battle continues against the wiles of the devil.

God has made His supreme effort to deal with sin, both as the sacrifice and the Sacrificer. Mankind plays a very important role in God's economy and plan to remove sin forever from His vast domain. The law of God condemns all who are under the curse of sin. "Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written, cursed is everyone that hangeth on a tree;" Gal.3:13. The Holy Spirit, through Paul has clearly stated the gospel. "For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; And that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures;" 1 Cor.15:3-4. Although the Lord died for the sins of the whole world, it is necessary for individuals to accept Christ as their personal Savior. When a person believes in the Eternal Son of God then one's sin, past, present and future are removed and cast

as far as the east is from the west. "For as the heavens are high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath He removed our transgressions from us." Ps.103:11-12. "For God sent not His Son into the world to, condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved. He that believeth on Him is not condemned; but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the Only begotten Son of God." Jn.3:17-18. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on Him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into judgement, but is passed from death unto life." Jn.5:24.

God being a just God and righteous God has done the utmost for all human beings in providing His Eternal Son that the atonement for our souls would be fully paid for, to the satisfaction of the Triune God. "For He is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world." 1 Jn.2:2. This is God's manifesto that all are without excuse, and but one way available for them to be accepted by God the Father. "To the praise of the glory of His grace, through which He hath made us accepted in the Beloved." Eph.1:6. "Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." Jn.14:6. God's Word is clear and to the point that one way only is available for the remission of sins, and that is in and through the Lord Jesus Christ, who shed His blood as a ransom for sin.

B. THE FIRST PROMISE AND GOD'S ASSURANCE

God is in no hurry to accomplish His plans and a thousand years is as a day in the eternity of our wonderful God. (2 Pet.3:8.) It was some four thousand years that God waited for the fullness of time to send forth His Eternal Son. (Gal.4:4-5.) Nothing can frustrate our most glorious Godhead. From the days of Adam and Eve, on into eternity to come, God has given mankind the privilege of choice, as to whether he would serve God or go his own selfish way. In this present age of grace it is up to each individual person to decide for himself, whether he will commit his life to the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ. Whosoever will do this as an act of faith will be redeemed, but if he refuses to acknowledge Christ as one's personal Savior then he must suffer the consequences of eternal damnation. The Jewish nation has rejected their Messiah and down through almost a total of two thousand years they have been scattered and persecuted severely. They cried out, "Let His blood be upon us and our children" and they were granted that very wish with tremendous suffering. However God always had a remnant of those who believed, and His first utterance of deliverance was preserved and fulfilled. "And I will put enmity between thee (Satan) and the woman, and between thy seed (unregenerate) and her seed (Christ); He shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel" Gen.3:15. Satan tried his best to destroy this possibility, first with the death of Abel and then the attempt to indwell all human persons, making it impossible for the seed of the woman to bruise his head.

This great promise was affirmed many times in the Bible, with references to "The sign of the virgin". "Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. The virgin was chosen of the tribe of Judah, conceived by the Holy Spirit, and brought forth the Incarnate One entering this world as a God/Man, the Eternal Son of God, that Incarnate body which was prepared before

the foundation of the world, as our Redeemer. Yes, Israel rejected their Messiah, by their own free choice, **BUT GOD**, in His omniscience presented a "Mystery Age of Grace", which was revealed through the fulfillment of. "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh". Joel 2:28a. Christ promised to build His church, but taught kingdom teachings, until the outpouring of God the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost. This then gave complete assurance, with great signs and wonders, as the church of Christ is being established. During this age of grace, a bride is being called out from all nations for the Eternal Son of God.

Since there is nothing hidden from our Almighty God, even the things of the future, God never needs to change His mind. Through the rejection by Israel of their Messiah, the kingdom was postponed. God knew this would happen and instead of sending Elijah as predicted, to herald the kingdom, God sent a substitute, by the name of John the Baptist (Mal.3:1). When the Lord will finally come to set up His kingdom upon this earth, He will send forth Elijah as promised. (Mal.4:5-6.) In order for the student of the Bible to be able to thoroughly understand God's wonder working power, he must understand the wonder working plan of God for all ages. There is a purpose of God in allowing sin to run its course, and this will be clarified. Always remember that time is not an element with God. We also must remember that God has set forth a plan to deal with sin once and forever, and He is allowing the cup of iniquity to be filled and He has already judged it once and forever at the cross.

GOD'S ASSURANCE

Perhaps one of the earliest Old Testament saints to understand the wonder working power of God was Enoch. God revealed the following to Enoch. "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgement upon all, and to convict all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him", Jude 14-15.

Another very important factor that is revealed to us in the Bible is the unconditional covenants that God made with Abraham and David. God, having made an unconditional covenant with both Abraham and David as to the establishment of kingdom rights, we can be assured of this coming Kingdom of God and the abolishment of the one world government under Satan. May we also mention the revelation that Isaiah was given concerning the entrance of the Eternal Son of God into this world, "Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; **Behold THE VIRGIN** shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. The Eternal Son of God came to redeem and also to reign. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this." Isa.9:6-7.

C. THE FIRST PROVISION BY GOD'S GRACE

THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE

Before we consider the satanic take over of this world system, we need to be assured of the sovereignty of God and His Eternal Omniscience. There is nothing hidden from God and He knows the end from the beginning. God made every preparation to counteract the evil forces, and chose out a man called Abraham, a nation called Israel, and the tribe of Judah, of the root of Jesse. The actual conditions in this evil world were such that it seemed impossible for a complete change to the good. But God always has ways and means to deal with every situation which confronts Him. He has also provided His followers that special relationship. "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4. God has provided us with the necessary weapons to stand fast in the Lord. "The weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds." 2 Cor.10:4. We are also confronted with the satanic influence over the whole world, to such an extent that every child coming into this world is brainwashed by Satan. "But if our gospel be hidden, it is hidden to them that are lost, in whom the god of this age hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them." 2 Cor.4:3-4.

From the very beginning, there has been a tremendous pressure over the whole world and God had to deal with this as He prepared for His Eternal Son to enter this realm as the Incarnate One. The purpose of the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ was to remove the barrier of sin. Satan who is the greatest creature that God had created as the anointed cherub, has lost his position but retained his power, under the sovereignty of God. Satan's strategy is to counterfeit as much as possible of what God promises, and so confuse the issues and deceive the creatures. Demon possession has resulted with the necessity of a flood.

THE FLOOD WAS NECESSARY TO MAINTAIN THE MESSIANIC HOPE

God had to destroy all of the people upon this earth, except eight souls. "Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord". Gen.6:8. Although Noah had many sons and daughters there were but three who followed the faith of their father, these were, Shem, Ham and Japheth. (Gen.6:9-10.) God had His eye upon Shem, who was the forerunner of Abram, and from this root we have Judah and Jesse and David. All of this was the results of God's mighty plan for all ages, in spite of Satan's claim upon this world's domain! We will go into more detail as to God's method of reclaiming this world through the coming Kingdom of God which shall be established forever.

In God's omniscience, and before there was any creation, plans were set forth by the Triune God to deal with sin, in the course of time. Our first knowledge of God's encounter with sin was in heaven itself, which we have already studied. The encounter with sin upon this earth began in the garden of Eden, and we have that great and mighty declaration by God in Genesis 3:15. "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed, He shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel." The conflict both in heaven and upon this earth which began through Lucifer, God will ultimately proclaim victory by the provision of

grace, making possible the marvelous and mighty deliverance from the penalty of sin, from the power of sin and eventually from the very presence of sin, through the Lord Jesus Christ.

Throughout the history of man upon Planet Earth, there has been ample provision by God for the manifestation of faith and trust in God's provision. Sin was not removed by the sacrifices of animals, for that was but a covering until the Supreme sacrifice of the Lamb of God, upon the cross of Calvary. Then the issue became the wages of sin or the gift of God through His Eternal Son. Now the question is, "What will you do with Jesus?" He became the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world. Mankind now is without excuse, whether religious or otherwise. "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness, because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shown it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse; Because when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man, and birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore, God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen." Rom.1:18-25. Although this is the result of the world, the flesh and the Devil, God in His amazing grace continues to manifest His eternal love through the Lord Jesus Christ.

Since God knows the end from the beginning, and nothing is hidden from Him, that first provision of His grace is still available to "Whosoever believeth"! As we study this conflict between God and Satan, we are assured that "Faith is the victory that overcometh". Satan has started his conflict with God in heaven, and the heavenly forces will eventually destroy him, "In the fullness of time". God has revealed both the conflict and the victory to us, through His written Word. We are admonished to. "Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." Eph.6:11.

As we close this introduction, concerning this great conflict, may we be aware of the victory that is certain through the mighty hand of God. God is allowing sin to run it's wicked course under the Prince of the power of the air. God's purpose and patience in dealing with sin, is to remove it forever from His eternal kingdom of righteousness. We will be dealing with several important issues, from the Biblical viewpoint, as to the issue of sin in the history of mankind. We are in the process of studying, why God has allowed the continual preparations for a one world government under Satan, who has become the god of this world system, allowing it to continue without interference from God. We will discuss the trend of affairs in our present world and Satan's attempt to dominate world affairs. Make no mistake about it, Satan is a student of the Bible and is trying his very best to confuse the minds of men, and apply his sum total of wisdom and deceit to utterly destroy God's plans. However, with the information which we receive from studying the Bible under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, we are assured of God's victory. This should give us great confidence as we face the daily issues in this present world, under the guidance of Almighty God.

As we conclude this preliminary study of this great battle for souls, we can rest assured, "For whatever is born of God overcometh the world; and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? " 1 Jn.5:4-5. The task would be impossible to face the onslaughts of Satan, without the Holy Spirit, dwelling within us. The love of the Lord Jesus Christ has been shed abroad in our hearts and firmly sealed by the Comforter, whom the Father has sent. "If ye love me, keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever; Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you." Jn.14:15-17. May we be mindful of these truths as we study the evil forces that are at work in these last days. Praise God for that blessed hope which we have, as the tribulation draws near, for the Lord Himself will come and deliver us out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) For the present time, we need to study the Word of God and ask the Holy Spirit to guide us into all truth. The clouds of that great storm are forming, and Satan with his great power which is under the sovereignty of God, will establish himself on planet earth, deceiving the nations, but sealing his destination, to be finally cast into the lake of fire forever and ever. There will also be many deceived by the devil as the final battles take place and they too will be cast forever into the lake of fire. There will be no second chance for those who deny the Lord Jesus Christ as the Eternal Son of God.

As we will discover in this study that we are dealing with the most treacherous forces from the spirit realm and we are entirely dependent upon God to provide not only salvation, but also uphold us by that same grace. This grace is manifested to us through the provision of God the Holy Spirit, teaching us His absolute truths, through the Bible. May we be reminded of the following acts of God.

1. **God promised the seed of the woman to deal with Satan and sin. (Gen.3:15; Isa.7:14; Gal.4:4-5.)**
2. **Seth became the ultimate family through which the Messiah would come. (Gen.4:25-27.)**
3. **God protected the Messianic lineage by bringing a flood and preserving the family of Shem. (Gen.6:5-10; Gen.11:10-30.)**
4. **God divided the nations, by confusing the languages and separating the lineage of Shem. (Gen.11:1-9.)**
5. **Abraham was given the promise by God. (Gen.12:1-8; Gen.15:1-17; Acts 7:1-8.)**
6. **The Tribe of Judah chosen for the Messianic hope. (Gen.49:8-12; Lk.1:26-38.)**
7. **Christ declared as both King and High Priest after the order of Melchizedek. (Heb.5:1-10; Heb.7:1-22.)**

CONCLUSION

As we venture into the Word of God, with a little better understanding of the origin of sin, and God's method of dealing with it, may we realize what it cost Almighty God to dispose of sin once and forever. Our totally depraved bodies had to be totally redeemed by The Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world. May we depend upon God the Holy Spirit to give us the strength and wisdom to overcome sin in our lives. God will always give you a way of escape from yielding to sin. Satan would like to keep us under the yoke of sin, and break our sweet Christian fellowship with fellow believers. Satan who is the god of darkness, would like to confuse us and cause us to go astray. May we maintain that fellowship in the Lord. "If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth; "But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son, cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.: 1 Jn.1:69.

We all are aware of the presence of sin, whether it be within an individual, family, community, race or nation, and the Bible has the only remedy to deal with sin. All mankind, regardless of having a streak of goodness or not is "Totally Depraved" by nature. It is God's grace that has been available to make the difference on a supernatural basis. This present world of ours is under the curse of sin and has become the domain of Satan. God has reclaimed it and settled the issue at the cross of Calvary. The Bible has been given to us, with God's promises and assurances, making a way of escape from the wages of sin, which is an eternal living death. May we thoroughly study this special course, showing that the Eternal Kingdom of God has claimed the victory. Acquaint yourself with the full armor which God has supplied to defeat the enemy of our souls in your life. We need to uphold one another in and through or daily prayers. "Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;" Eph.6:18.

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER ONE

- 1. Where did the first sin occur? Give Scripture.**
- 2. What was the result of this sin? Give brief essay.**
- 3. What was Lucifer's responsibility before he sinned? Give Scripture.**
- 4. Explain Revelation 12:3-6. Please refer to other Scriptures in writing of this Scripture.**
- 5. Why did God give angels and mankind the freedom of choice?**
- 6. Explain Revelation 4:6-11.**
- 7. According to Isaiah 14:12-14; Has Satan fallen from heaven? If not, when will he fall?**
- 8. Compare Satan's 5 "I wills" with God's 5 "I Wills" in Ezekiel 28:16-18.**
- 9. Is the battle between God and Satan real? Explain with Scripture.**
- 10. Where has Satan set up his kingdom? Write briefly on this question.**
- 11. When Adam and Eve sinned, how was it passed on to all of us human beings?**
- 12. Where has sin been dealt with by Almighty God?**
- 13. Give a brief essay on, "The First Promise of Redemption".**
- 14. Give a brief essay on "God's assurance of Victory over sin".**
- 15. Why was the flood necessary in order for God to keep His promise of dealing with sin?**
- 16. Give important names through which God kept "The Messianic Hope" alive.**
- 17. How do we maintain confidence for victory, as we see this "One World Government" forming?**

CHAPTER TWO



SATAN'S USURPED DOMAIN

CHAPTER TWO

SATAN'S USURPED DOMAIN

INTRODUCTION

Satan has set up his main headquarters upon this earth, as he hopes to disrupt God's plans of using the seed of the woman to bruise his head. (Gen.3:15.) Man in himself, and apart from God has been an utter failure in establishing stable governments throughout the world, after trying every attempt to bring about a one world Government, from the tower of Babel, the Babylonian Empire, the Medo Persians, the Grecian Empire, the Roman Empire, until these Governments of our day. We have heard about "Social Reform", "A New World Order", "United Nations" and plans for "A Better World", and the cry, "Peace, Peace" when there is no peace. The national governments are still looking for a powerful dictator, who will promise some sort of peace. The Bible predicts that such a dictator will come forth, and will get a world wide recognition, as he promises his false peace. The scene is being set for such a complete takeover by Satan's man under the permissive sovereignty of God. May we consider the following conditions.

A. THIS PLANET EARTH

WHY A ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT IS NECESSARY

Civilization has come to a point of no return, and is plunging headlong into a ONE WORLD ORDER. The motto, from many wistful thinkers, "One man, one vote", with the promise of a "Utopia". This has paved the way for Dictatorial rights and the destruction of many nations. We are experiencing through such actions, another Tower of Babel, where mankind is again attempting to make a name for himself, excluding God's plans as set forth in the Bible. The United Nations is building that tower of a new social order and is using their every effort to control a One World Image. It is preparing for the takeover of the dictator who will be ready for the Revival of the Roman Empire. There are a few major points in securing this one world government.

Majority vote is to be the ruling factor, whether capable or not, until the few get into the seat of power. The motto has been voiced around the world, "One Man, One Vote", with the promise by the few that a "Utopia" is just around the corner, with a new world order. This of course has the effect of making unrest everywhere, with great demands for help from the prosperous nations. These politicians tell us that a new world order is necessary. However, totally depraved man cannot accomplish this. Eventually, God alone will bring in this perfect government. The evil forces will, however, bring in a counterfeit world order under a world Dictator. This we are well aware of as we understand the prophetic Word of God. There are a few factors that contribute to this one world government which is in the process of developing. May we also remind ourselves that the world is not getting better but will continue to get worse as we draw nearer to these end times before the Rapture takes place. We do have many

advantages of sending the Gospel to "The Regions Beyond", and we need to make haste as we draw nearer to the coming of the Lord. Now is the time to send forth that glorious gospel message and prepare believers for that "Eternal Utopia" under the dictates of Almighty God. God's perfect plan of all ages will come to pass in God's own time. God will always be sovereign over all!

WORLD COMMUNICATION

With the use of satellites and on the spot reporters, news of distant lands is reported from around the world as it occurs. Rapid communication brings rapid action, and almost immediately we have the news report from the most remote area in the world. It is amazing how rapidly we not only get the news, but we see the very actions through our television. Whether it be terrorism from the jungles of Africa or in the distant hills of Afghanistan, we get to see it. The report of earth quakes, floods, famine or starvation, comes to our living rooms through television, as they occur. No longer do the nations act individually, but now they are part and parcel of the whole world system, and this is drawing the world together for better or for worse, and the majority of this is for the worse. The Lord Himself has told us that such conditions would exist in the latter days. "And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars; see that ye be not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom; and there shall be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes, in various places. All these are the beginning of sorrows." Matt.24:6-8. Regardless of what is promised by the one world Dictator, there will be troublous times until God Himself established His kingdom of righteousness.

There have been great empires of the past, which were able to control vast continents with limited controls, Babylon, Greece, Medo-Persians, Egypt and Rome have exercised this great power. They were often very ruthless in their conquest and destructive in their controls. Their methods were total slavery of all conquered nations and any rebellion was usually fatal. The lines of communication were long and slow, making it difficult to put down rebellion quickly. Today the matter is quite different, with immediate communication. The process of this coming "ONE WORLD ORDER" is not based upon justice and equality, but rather on expediency and purpose. The pragmatic approach is not a cry for "Justice For All", but rather for "All to be Conformed to the New Socialized World Order". We are living in a computerized age and there is no room for nationalism or patriotism, but rather an international, "ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT", under the terrible power of Satan. This will be his counterfeit, given to the nations around the world. This computer age will make it easy for the dictator maintain immediate control.

During world war two, I was a missionary stationed out in the foothills of Kilimanjaro, working among the nomads called Masai. I did not have a radio and certainly very little communication with the outside world. I would usually go for supplies to Moshi, Tanganyika with my very good friend Jeram Vadgama. We would buy our monthly supplies, if the weather permitted. During the monsoon it would usually be about every two months that we could travel to Moshi. As the war was getting worse, and the Italian troops were in Ethiopia, we were told to have sufficient food supplies and fuel to be ready to head south toward South Africa. Being mindful of this, we always brought just a little more supplies. Toward the end of the war, we

settled down to more intensive mission work and traveled more frequently to Moshi with my friend Jeram, who had a saw mill on the slopes of this great mountain. This particular time that we traveled together to Moshi, the people all seemed to be rejoicing over something. I finally ask them what was the occasion of their joy? They looked at me with great surprise, saying, "Haven't you heard that the war is over"? This was two weeks after armistice was declared. Needless to say, my communication with the outside world was very limited.

Today, almost immediately, we have the news report from the most remote area in the world. It is amazing how rapidly we not only get the news, but we see the very actions of disaster, earthquakes, torrents of rains, drought, coups, terrorism or whatever it may be. No longer are the nations of the world a law unto themselves, but the whole world is in communication with each other as well as affiliation, and negotiations. Since the majority of the world is prone to sin and evil, it will become an easy takeover by a world Dictator who will be accepted by the world leaders. Satan will step in and direct affairs at a given time. We know from the Bible, exactly when that will take place. The Bible calls it, "The Abomination of Desolation". It will be during the last half of the great tribulation. Michael the archangel and his army will battle with Satan, casting him out of heaven forever. (Rev.9:1-11; Rev.12:7-12.) This planet earth will be the last stand that Satan and his billions of demons will have before they are cast into the lake of fire, and remain there forever and ever.

There have been great empires of the past, which were able to control vast continents with limited control, by placing armies throughout their conquered territories. The main empires that we are interested in, are those mentioned in the Bible. The prophet Daniel was given direct word from heaven as to Babylon, Medo-Persian, Grecian, and the Roman Empire. These Empires were ruthless in their conquest and very destructive as they conquered the known world. Their methods were total slavery of all conquered nations and practiced severe cruelty in case of rebellion. Their lines of communication were long and slow, at times, making it difficult to put down rebellion. Today, the matter is quite different, with the immediate communication through the satellites and television. Such rapidity will make a "ONE WORLD ORDER" possible apart from justice and equality. The order of the day will be "Expediency" with the "Pragmatic Purpose". There will not be "Justice for all", but rather, "Socialized Order" over all. We are living in a "Computerized Age" and nationalism and patriotism must give way to the coming, "One World Government". The World order and controls will be in the hands of a few world leaders, under indirect control of Satan and his demons..

NUCLEAR DEVELOPMENT

The fear of nuclear destruction of all mankind has gripped the imagination of the thinking world, and out of frustration, they will be ready to accept most anything, short of a nuclear war. Mankind is looking for a powerful world leader who will be able to prevent such a catastrophe and will follow him at all cost. This will be the opportunity of the evil forces to take advantage of this fear. Satan is looking for such a man, being the god of this world system with power to brain wash every soul coming into this world.(2 Cor.4:4.). Democracy has failed and cannot offer such a solution to world problems, with their "One Man, One Vote". This only leads to chaos and continual wars. Socialism is the order of the day and has swept around the world through various forms of communism. Whether these socialistic nations are united or not, they

will have to be dealt with by God. Russia as a great empire has been dissolved, but the influence and her tactics will be used by the upcoming dictator of the world. The nuclear development will be under the control of such a dictator and we read, "And they worshiped the dragon who gave power unto the beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying, Who is like the beast? Who is able to make war with him?" Rev.13:4.

WORLD BLOCS

We are all familiar with the expression, "Birds of a feather, flock together" and perhaps this is one reason why the world is divided into blocs, according to geographical, religious, cultural heritage, color and ideology. We would often hear the news reporters talking about "The Third World " as a unit differing from the western nations and what was known as the "Russian Bloc". Emerging Africa is considered that "Third World Bloc". We could add to this a "Fourth World Bloc" of the Oriental and Asiatics. To this we could also add a "Fifth World Bloc" of the Moslem world, which has become powerful through the oil resources. These various blocs are certainly very different and the coming dictator of the world will have to make certain concessions to them. He will be making a pact with Israel for a seven year period, only to be broken by him after three and one half years. (Dan.9:27.) The coming Dictator of the world will ride into power by the great ecumenical religious system of the world. (Rev.17:3-8; Rev.18:1-24.) Certain liberties will be granted to these various blocs, uniting them under that one satanic power, and then the liberties will be removed when the powerful purpose is achieved. I remember that when Castro took over Cuba, he was asked, "Are you a Communist"? His answer at that time was, "No I am not a communist". Later on, when approached with the same question, he admitted that he was always a communist and he did not admit it at the beginning of his reign, because he wanted all the Cubans to remain calm.

With the various world blocs, well established it will simplify a takeover by the coming world dictator, who will grant them temporary concessions. The well established blocs can be manipulated until he has them all under a strong world power, with himself in full command, dominating the one world government. The word, "Detente" has been a terrific and subtle weapon of entering negotiations. This is a supreme weapon of socialism. All that is necessary is to get the opposition to sign on the dotted line on a compromise and give and take basis, and it becomes simple to "Take and Break", for the godless socialists to take over the controls, furthering their wicked cause. So these various blocs of power become tools in the hands of that coming dictator, establishing a "One World Government". This will be an important step which will bring in the "Revival of The Roman Empire." These power blocs will be reinforced at the beginning of the Abomination of Desolation when Satan and his army of demons are cast out of heaven and establish themselves upon planet earth. Satan already has the power of brain washing every soul being born into this world. (2 Cor.4:4.) The trend of this whole world system is toward a godless socialism, and that brings us up to another important aspect of world affairs.

REJECTION OF GOD

The trend of the whole world is toward a complete rejection of God. Yes, God is sovereign, omnipotent, omnipresent, omniscient and immutable, but with freedom of choice which has been given to mankind, the world affairs are passing into the hands of Satan. Our Living God is aware of all of these affairs and in His omniscience clearly records these coming events in the Bible. As we study God's Word we realize the necessity of God to make available an "Air Lift" for the saints of God to be caught up from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) This satanic take over is coming, under the permissive will and the sovereignty of God and nothing will stop it. The battle is not against flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers, rulers of darkness and spiritual wickedness in high places. (Ephesians 6:12.)

God is still on the throne and always will be, but rebellion has taken place within His Eternal Kingdom, through the volition of both the angelic and mortal beings. It would have been far easier for Almighty God to have made all of His creatures as robots, or puppets, completely under His control, BUT GOD, preferred the subjects of His creation to choose to serve Him on the basis of His love for them. It may seem as though God is losing out, with the tremendous odds against Him among mortal beings as well as the angelic hosts, but God's reserves and resources of power haven't even been touched in this battle for souls. We only have to turn to the Bible, and you see, God has let us in on His Master Plan. We who live in this temporal world, base everything solely on time, BUT GOD who is eternal lives above time as well as beyond time. God can afford to take His time, as He did in sending His Eternal Son into this world. "But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons." Gal.4:4-5. So in the fullness of God's time He will establish His eternal kingdom of righteousness. This we will study, after we complete this One World Government Under Satan. We must always remember that God is sovereign and is allowing the cup of iniquity to be filled and overflowing to eradicate it forever from His Eternal Utopia.

From the very creation of Adam and Eve, God has allowed "Freedom of Choice" to be the order of the day, and each generation, though now under the bondage of sin, must make their own decision. Joshua made that very clear to all of Israel. "And if it seem evil unto you to serve the Lord, choose you this day whom ye will serve,; but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord." Josh.24:15. As Israel turned away from the Living God, so this whole world is turning their back away from The Living God. Just remember, "There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death." Prov.14:12. Needless to say, the world has rejected God and they have never learned from past failures. Take for instance, the great ambitions of mortal man with the Tower of Babel. (Gen.11:1-9.) You would have thought that after that terrible world wide flood that came upon all flesh with only eight survivors, that the survivors would have feared to turn away from God. But the records in the Bible show that the flood had the reverse effect upon mankind with the attempted construction of the Tower of Babel. That strong statement made by the builders, "...Let us make a name for ourselves ..." Gen.11:4; left God out of their plans. The people of all ages, as then desired to exalt self regardless of who gets hurt, so now the ungodly say, "Every man for himself"!. But God, being sovereign, knew that He had to confuse their

language, in order to protect the Messianic hope. God was preparing to separate Israel unto Himself for that very reason.

In our day we are aware of the UNO, with their claim to unite all under their command, which is but another Tower of Babel. This is but another way that the evil forces are breaking down nationalism and establishing a one world order. There happens to be a series of various blocs within the UNO, and they all want a big say in the world affairs. Regardless of their cultural background and prejudices, they all are godless and have ruled out the Living God in favor of the god of this world system. Always remember that the unregenerate in this world have been brain washed by satanic power. This one world government under Satan is in the process of being formed, and the Revival of the Roman Empire will take place. In our system of fast communication it is necessary for a One World Government to maintain law and order, but what is forming is not according to just laws but rather "Authority for Authority's sake". What we are seeing today, around the world is a one world that is becoming "Interdependent, and destroying nationalism by replacing it with socialism. It was God who separated the nations in order that He might preserve the Messianic promise through one nation. God knew that He had to separate these nations and prepare Israel with a title deed to her promised land, awaiting the fullness of time for the promised Messiah. "When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when He separated the sons of Adam, He set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel. For the Lord's portion is His people; Jacob is the lot of His inheritance. He found him in a desert land, and in the waste, howling wilderness; He led him about, He instructed him, He kept him as the apple of His eye." Deut.32:8-10.

INDEPENDENT

NATIONS SEPARATED BY GOD

By the Almighty power of God, the sons of Adam were separated as a judgement against the building of the Tower of Babel. As I had briefly mentioned before, God knew that this rebellion would come, and had prepared to separate the nations. "When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when He separated the sons of Adam, He set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel" Deut.32:8. God kept alive the Messianic Hope, and the possibility of the out pouring of the Holy Spirit, upon all flesh in the latter days. (Joel.2:28.) From all nations, God is calling out believers, now that the Eternal Son of God had come, fulfilling God's promise of a Redeemer. We as Christians are also aware of God's admonition to us to be separate from this world system, (Rom.12:2.) We are also reminded, "Wherefore, come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty." 2 Cor.6:17-18. We also read, "For our citizenship is in heaven from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ." Phil.3:20. However, we must remember that the Lord Jesus Christ has sent us into the world as Ambassadors to preach the gospel to all nations. Our destination is different from the earthly people, for we are members of the body of Christ, as His future bride. We are drawn from all nations and are not to comply to this coming world order. Israel was promised a land and heritage through the unconditional covenant that God made with Abraham, and therefore there

must be a distinction among nations. Israel has preferential treatment as a nation, because of the lineage of the Messiah. "And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and do all His commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth;" Deut.28:1. God determined the bounds of each nation and it has

been Satan's purpose to break down these boundaries and especially destroy Israel as a nation. But God is always aware of every evil move of that wicked one. "And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation." Acts 17:26.

The separation of the nations had to come, and God had a definite reason for this separation. The attempt at building the tower of Babel was to keep all the people in one place, rather than scattering around the world. God scattered the people in a single stroke of confusing their language. This was detrimental to Satan's plans of destroying the Messianic Hope, as he tried before the flood, so now at the tower of Babel. With the Devil's tremendous wisdom and power, he continues to work toward the united nations as a counterfeit to what God has promised through the Eternal Son of God. Had it not been for the separation of the nations by God, we would never have had the fulfillment of the coming of the Messiah. The promise to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob could never have materialized, the inspired Word of God through Israel would not have been made possible.

When God divided the nations of the earth after the flood, (Gen.10:32.) the lineage of Shem was chosen through which the Messiah would enter this world. God had to drive Adam and Eve from the land of Paradise, to the land of work to survive. "Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from where he was taken. So He drove out man; and He placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way of the tree of life." Gen.3:23-24. Satan had previously usurped the earth as his domain to battle against his Creator. Adam and Eve were easy prey for Satan to deceive and rule. His plans as observed were to infiltrate and possess every creature born, but God sent the flood and chose out Shem to preserve the seed through which the Messiah would come. Abram was called out of the land of his birth to a land of promise. (Gen.12:1-7.) In the fullness of time, Christ was born of the Virgin Mary, whom Israel rejected, and was scattered and persecuted. Israel is being brought back to her land of promise and will receive her final punishment and judgement because of her rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ. These are preparations for her restoration under the powerful hand of God. There are many promises of God, yet to be fulfilled, especially written in the Book of Daniel and the Book of Revelation. Is it any wonder that the Middle East is in great turmoil, and eventually it will be the battleground of the nations as the dictators of the world fight for supremacy. This must come to pass "Under Satan", as he attempts to make the nations interdependent for his "One World Take Over".

TOTAL INVOLVEMENT

Since the second world war and the constant fighting throughout the world, the threat of nuclear destruction, has caused great fear among the nations. The United Nations are trying to solve all these problems, policing the world with her "Detente" and equal vote for all, whether

a large nation or a small one. The Socialists from all the nations are in the authority, while the Western Nations, and especially America carry the heavy load of financing and feeding the new national nations in development at no cost to them. It adds up to a total involvement of the Western nations, helping to develop these new nations, with no obligations on the part of the receivers. At a great expense, the Western world, under great strain and debt, are financing these new nations, with borrowed fund, are paving the way for the European Common Market to become the "Revival of The Roman Empire" according to the Word of God. The coming Dictator will step into a tremendous power bloc, through the aspirations of socialism, desiring to make a name for themselves apart from the God of their creation. Since socialism has become the order of the day, with interdependence, this has led to the aspirations of the nations. The main thrust with this "Interdependence" is to make a name for the united nations, regardless of the cost. It is paving the way through this total involvement for that man of sin who will as a Beast come up from the sea to revive the Roman Empire. (Rev.13:1-10.)

ASPIRATIONS OF NATIONS

National leaders from around the world have always had the desire to be "Over All" and be in the place of unlimited power. With the lines of communication shortened, and the terrible results that a nuclear war could bring, the natural trend is toward a total interdependence, with a group of nations throwing all of their resources into the power struggle. If the signed statements and the agreements of the nations could be trusted, there could be a ray of hope for a just form of Internationalism. However, this is not the case from passed experiences. The aspiration of the nations, leaves Almighty God out of the picture entirely, and all shall come to naught, as foretold by God, written in the Bible. There have been four great empires that ruled the world, in their day, namely, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece, and the Roman Empire. There have been other nations attempting this status, and all have failed. So the great powers of today are all trying to establish themselves as the number one, great and powerful and capable of ruling the world. Russia has tried it and is now divided, China will attempt to cross the Euphrates and take over the vast wealth, but will fail. The UNO will eventually be subservient to the Revival of the Roman Empire and it will survive for a period of seven years, during the Great Tribulation. Satan will have full sway during that episode, with his billions of demons, but will be cast into the bottomless pit for the duration of the Kingdom of Righteousness, which will be set up by the Lord Jesus Christ, the King of kings and Lord of lords. We will verify these statement with the Word of God as we progress through this study.

HOW WILL THE ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT BE FORMED?

With differences of opinions, and with all of the racial problems, the languages and the drug traffic, how will it be possible for the formation of a One World Government? We are witnessing during these present years, the breaking down of tariff walls between the Western nations, beginning in Europe with the common market under the revived Roman Empire, and now between Canada and Mexico. This will bring much foreign trade especially through Mexico, avoiding tariff and under bidding our national products with cheap labor. International

dependence will pave the way for a one world government. Nationalism and patriotism will be a thing of the past, with man's great desire to live at peace with each other, regardless of the cost. This can only cause a break down of the nations, which God has separated. The evil forces which are at work in the hearts of all unbelievers will take advantage of every loop hole of "supply and Demand" We have seen the biggest "Black Mail" ever, when oil became the most important commodity, world wide. The Western world, which is one of the largest users of oil, is frantically looking for substitutes as the price of oil rises and until something similar can be found, the oil fields will be used for pressure and special favors.

With our machine age, not only requiring oil, but minerals of all sorts, this "Black Mail" will continue and the strong and wealthy nations will move in and continue their game of chess and monopoly and eventually will have the world at bay and make their demands with their terms. Many may be fooled with the establishing of footholds in small nations but there will be a complete take over of all important commodities. Russia will make a wild attempt to take over the Middle East, even though they have given rights to her previous satellites. That sneak attack will take place as God has fore told. (Ezek.38-39.) This will be another attempt of Satan to destroy Israel. His final choice will come when thrown out of heaven and the Abomination of Desolation becomes a reality for the evil forces. The Dictator of the world will become the agent of Satan to dominate this coming interdependent world of nations. As the Bible predicts, that "One World Government" will come as a counterfeit, led by Satan himself. Satan will be desperate, after being cast out of heaven and with the two beasts well established and accepted by the nations, he will have an easy task of deceiving the nations.

B. SATAN'S COUNTERFEIT WILL BE ACCEPTED

From the time that mankind had but one common language, there was a desire to "Let us make a name for ourselves". This excluded God and was meant to glorify man. The tower of Babel was the first united effort of mankind to build a one world Government with a taint of religion about the project. We have previously dealt with this issue. God stopped it by confusing their languages. (Gen.11:1-9.) God scattered them abroad upon the whole face of the earth. Satan tried to consolidate and regulate, and suppress nations with his witchcraft and heathenism, but keeps on failing but has not stopped trying down through the ages. Satan being the god of this world system even tried to offer it to Christ, if He would only bow down and worship him. (Matt.4:1-11.)

It is true that mankind has rebelled against the Living God and desires to be the master of his own destiny. However there is more at stake than just man's desires, for Satan, being the arch enemy of God, desires to make Planet Earth his domain. Here are a few issues to consider, as we review the world conditions of today. We must first of all acknowledge Satan as the god of this world system, and thus we can understand some of the evil conditions of the day.

SATAN THE GOD OF THIS WORLD SYSTEM

"In the beginning, God created the Heaven and the Earth, and the Earth became without form and void." Gen.1:1-2a. We do not learn too much by such a statement from God, but one thing is sure. the Earth was created not as wasteland but as all of the other creation of God.

Something must have happened to this Planet Earth for we know that Satan is the enemy of God. This enemy is a powerful creature but not an eternal god, for there is but one God over all! (Deut.6:4; 1 Tim.1:5.) The only conclusion that one can make is, "This enemy of God must have rebelled against God, his Creator in some previous time. Turn with me to Isaiah chapter 14:12-14. "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: (Stars often refer to angels as in this case) I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High". These are Satan's five "I wills" against the God of his creation. Had he been the only one amongst the heavenly creatures, his task would have been impossible, but Satan was very influential and powerful, that he drew one third of God's angels in his wicked way. (Rev.12:3-4.) Lucifer did have a throne in heaven as well as a private army for the border patrol. One out of every three angels followed Satan in this heavenly revolt and some were so vile that they had to be put into chains of darkness, until the judgement day. (Jude 6.) There is a whole army of these fallen angels in the bottomless pit, waiting until their release from prison for the great tribulation to start. (Rev. 9:1-12.) There are still more under the Euphrates river, waiting for their release. (Rev.12:13-21.) All of this gives us an idea of how great this revolt was against our Mighty God. It also declares how powerful Satan is, being the greatest creature God ever created. Please note the Scriptures. "Moreover the Word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord God; Thou sealest up the sum.

1. **FULL OF WISDOM**
2. **PERFECT IN BEAUTY**
3. **THOU HAST BEEN IN EDEN THE GARDEN OF GOD**
4. **EVERY PRECIOUS STONE WAS THY COVERING**
5. **THOU ART THE ANOINTED CHERUB THAT COVERETH; and I have set thee so:**
6. **THOU WAS UPON THE HOLY MOUNTAIN OF GOD**
7. **THOU HAST WALKED UP AND DOWN IN THE MIDST OF THE STONES OF FIRE**
8. **THOU WAS PERFECT IN THY WAYS FROM THE DAY THAT THOU WAS CREATED TILL INIQUITY WAS FOUND IN THEE." Ezek. 28:11-15.**

As far as the records from the Bible show, Satan is the greatest creature that God created, and perhaps this helps to explain the tremendous influence that Satan had on one-third of all the angels. Certainly if Satan could convince the angels of his great power, how much more is he able to control the kingdoms of this world. We must remember that he has power to brain-wash

these powerful rulers, ruling this world. (2 Cor.4:4; 2 Thess.2:8-12.) As we draw nearer to the end of this age, we are aware of the strong delusion that has come upon the majority of our world leaders, because OF their rejection of the truth of God's Word.

INTERNATIONAL SOCIALISM

The trend of world affairs is not as to whether Governments are left or right but rather how much socialism can be imposed upon the nations. International socialism is well advanced and with liberalism and godlessness at the helm, that Dictator will have no problem in establishing his ungodly social order. Socialism is the order of the day, regardless as to the amount accepted. Nations have supported terrorist leaders and have often helped them to get into power, hoping that terrorism would then stop. This has been a false policy down through the ages. This all paves the way for the evil forces under Satan to rule and reign through the ungodly. This bolsters up the ego of man to rule apart from God. Under the control of Satan who is the prince of the power of the air, worldly leaders are swayed into lethargy and brain washing by the evil forces. Satan will always build up the ego of man and promise great things in his deceitfulness. He will cause the leaders of the world to desire to rule apart from Almighty God. The political tendency in all generations is to apply a pragmatic approach to every problem or desire. Man's desire is to be able to accomplish his own thing regardless of right or wrong.

MAN'S DESIRE TO RULE APART FROM ALMIGHTY GOD

This important factor needs to be emphasized that, rulers of nations have always desired to rule apart from God. They are never satisfied with partial rule but always want a little more. This is also a trend among many millionaires, when you ask them how much is enough and whether they say it or not, their attitude is, "Just a little more"! Mortal man is easy prey for Satan and his fallen angels. Man is totally depraved apart from God and henceforth any suggestions from the evil realm will quickly be followed, rejecting God the Father's provision through the Lord Jesus Christ. Christ alone can make that change, for He died for the sins of the whole world, and has removed the barrier of sin, making possible access to the righteousness of God. "For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness." Rom.1:18. When Christ is rejected, then the conclusive results is, "Because that which may be known of God is manifested in them, for God hath shown it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse; Because when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man, and birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore, God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves. Who exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen. " Rom.1:19-25. This world of ours is becoming a Sodom and Gomorrah and

is falling right into the hands of Satan who is the father of lies. This is leading the ungodly world into a one world government under the power of Satan.

THE STAGE IS BEING SET FOR A ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT

The United Nations financed mostly by United States of American is flexing her muscles attempting to be the world's police system with a pragmatic outlook. This power bloc is biased and in favor of socialism, breaking down nationalism and in favor of a one world order. The Bible clearly exposed this trend at the tower of Babel. A godless affiliation as a one world order is disastrous. However world rulers are attempting to repeat the mistakes of long ago. Decades ago it was thought impossible to unite Europe under one Common Market, but before our very eyes we have seen the formation of a combination of nations which are culturally opposed to one another, are now in the process of the "United States of Europe". Smaller nations are forming blocs, uniting for power, regardless of race or religion and paving the way for a powerful dictator to take over the world as his empire. This will be according to Biblical exposure of the Revival of the Roman Empire with the Beast as a Dictator, coming up out of the sea of nations. "And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like a leopard, and his feet of a bear, and his mouth like a mouth of a lion; and the dragon gave him his power, and his throne and great authority." Rev. 13:1-2. There will be a variety of policies under the combined rule during these latter days. "And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron, forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things, and, as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise. And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with clay. And as the toes of the feet were part of iron and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly broken. And where as thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men; but they shall not adhere one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay." Dan.2:40-43. This clearly points to the revival of the Roman Empire with the ten kingdoms that will become seven, under the seed of Satan that will mix with men. The power of this Roman Empire will supersede all other, as controlled by Satan and his billions of demons. The Dictator of the world will be given power over all the commodities around the world. Right now the Middle East is being staged for a tremendous show down. God's Word informs us of all of these events, with the final thrust and break through of Satan. The Middle East is very important to Satan as he is angry with Israel and will do all that he can, to destroy her. (Rev.12:13-17.) We do not have to infer concerning Satan's intentions, for God knows every action of Satan and every thought before hand, as nothing is hidden from our Almighty God. When Satan is cast out of heaven with all of his demons, by Michael the archangel, he will be very angry and attack the nation Israel. This will happen during the latter half of the great tribulation, known as The Abomination of Desolation. "And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman who brought forth the male child" Rev.12:13.

THE FINAL BREAK THROUGH OF SATAN

The process of the evolutionary theory has been well established in our godless governments. God as the Creator of all has been brushed aside and man's imagination under the brain washing of Satan, has been established. This conflict by Satan has been well planned and his bill of goods has been sold to the raging nations of the world. We are reminded of God's Word, "Why do the nations rage, and the peoples imagine a vain thing? The kings of earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He who sitteth in the heavens shall laugh, the Lord shall have them in derision." Ps.2:1-4. God's plans are set before the foundation of the world and will be completed , in the fullness of time.

With the constant threat of nuclear destruction, nations and people will grasp for anything to keep peace upon this earth. Certainly Satan has been granted great power in the sovereignty of God, which we will be discussing. Satan offered the kingdoms of this world to Christ, during His earthly ministry, if He would but bow down and worship him. At the right moment, Satan will be offering his version of "United Nations" to the world, under his control. The nations have been well groomed to give in to terrorism and it's demands. So, when the Rapture of the saints takes place and the restraining power of the Holy Spirit is lifted, the world of nations will be ready to accept a false peace on the enemy's terms. This will usher in the one world government under Satan, with tremendous power before the Lord returns with the saints to establish the kingdom of righteousness. There will be a great slaughter of people during this power struggle between God and Satan, but praise our Sovereign God who will be victorious. (Isa.40:13-17.) The tribulation recorded in the Book of Revelation is a dreadful series of events even to read. Praise God we will be "Caught Up" to meet the Lord and be led to our heavenly Paradise during those seven years. As we await that trumpet call, may we occupy until He comes! There are souls to be reached with the Gospel, which is the power of God unto salvation. (Rom.1:16.) We have God the Holy Spirit living within us as we fulfill that great commission of Christ's. (Matt.28:18-20.) We confront the power of Satan as we speed the gospel light, but we are not alone! Christ will never leave us nor forsake us.

C. SATAN'S POWER

What does the Bible teach concerning this coming kingdom of Satan? A great deal of speculation has been made as to what in the world is happening. I have written extensively from the Biblical viewpoint as to "What does the Future Hold"? There would be a lot of confusion among believers, if it were not for God's revelation through the Printed Page of the Bible. We need not be confused as to these latter days before the Rapture takes place. Israel is rapidly moving back to her land of promise, and the Arabic nations are trying their best to prevent it. The balance of power in this world is rapidly moving from America to Europe and the Middle East will play an important part in providing oil from beneath and minerals from the Dead Sea. The Dead Sea is one of the richest deposits of minerals in the whole world. Perhaps that will be one reason why the coming dictator will make a seven year covenant with Israel. (Dan.9:27.)

Yes a one world Government under Satan has been predicted and clearly exposed in the Bible. This counterfeit of Satan's will be accepted, as he will manifest his great power. In order

to fully understand this, we must combine the Book of Daniel and the Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ. The Book of Revelation unlocks the mysterious truths of the Book of Daniel. John on the Isle of Patmos had a pre-televised view of all of this in great detail and well analyzed to him by the Holy Spirit. God in His sovereignty and omniscience is in full control, regardless of these evil powers. Satan will be thrown out of heaven with all of his demons and will make his last powerful stand upon this planet earth. He will drag with him billions of children of darkness, having brain washed them with his deceit and lies. We will be in the process of combining Daniel's prophecy with that of the Book of Revelation. Let us see what God has revealed to us through the Book of Daniel.

The image which Nebuchadnezzar had seen, sets forth great empires, namely Babylon, Medo-Persian, Grecian and finally the Roman Empire. It is the Revival of the Roman Empire in which we are mainly concerned, since Satan will establish his "One World Government" through the means of "The Common Market of Europe". We have already discussed Daniel 2:40-43. and are aware of the revival of the Roman Empire. Now turn with me to Daniel 7:7-8. "After this I saw in the night visions, and, behold, a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly, and it had great iron teeth; it devoured and broke in pieces, and stamped the residue with its feet; and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it, and it had ten horns. I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before which there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots; and behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things." The interpretation of this is of great importance and Gabriel explains it . "Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceedingly dreadful, whose teeth were iron, and its nails of bronze, which devoured, broke in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; and of the ten horns that were in its head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than its fellows. I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them, Until the Ancient of days came and judgement was given to the saints of the Most High; and the time came that the saints possess the kingdom. Thus he said, the fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise; and another shall rise after them, and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and think to change the times and the laws; and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time." Dan.7:19-25

This revelation concerning the revival of the Roman Empire is very important in the explanation and the foretelling given to us in the Book of Revelation. The tribulation or "Jacob's Trouble" , which is the last week or seven years of the 70 times 7 or 490 years, is set forth. The second half or 3 1/2 years of the tribulation this wicked Dictator will become very powerful under the direct power of Satan. This is known as "The Abomination of Desolation", when hell will break loose upon this earth.. This is all to come to pass after the saints are raptured out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) The Tribulation saints will face terrible slaughter under this beast. "The prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary, and the end of it shall be with flood, and unto the end of the war desolation are determined. And he shall

confirm the covenant with many for one week; and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate." Dan.9:26b-27. This Dictator will enter into the Middle East and Jerusalem with great power. (Dan.11:36-45.)

This revelation would not be very clear to us unless we would systematically study other portions of Scripture, especially from the Book of Revelation. It is also a little confusing in the light of Russia's and China's intent of conquest, to invade the Middle East. (Ezek.38-39.) However, these tremendous blocs are tools in Satan's hands, combining them into satanic world domination. We know that God will eliminate these powers in the fullness of time. "In that day, saith the Lord, I will smite every horse with astonishment, and his rider with madness: and I will open mine eyes upon the house of Judah, and will smite every horse of the people with blindness". Zech.12:4. This will be the turning point of Satan, as he will now place great power within the Revived Roman Empire. Satan and his demon armies will manifest that great power of principalities, and rulers of darkness, using spiritual wickedness in high places to achieve his mighty power. "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Eph.6:12, This struggle that we have is nothing compared to what is coming to this world, when the Rapture takes place. The evil forces will break loose with great destruction upon planet earth. The fury of the evil forces plus the wrath of God will be the order of the day.

THE COMING ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT IN REALITY

Daniel was very concerned about this coming fierce beast of the last days and rightly so. It would be impossible for us to understand this coming satanic empire, apart from the Book of Revelation. The rise of the Dictator and the false prophet will come according to man's desire and God in His omniscience has recorded it in the Book of Revelation. "And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a Beast rise up out of the sea (International setting) having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns and upon his heads THE NAME OF BLASPHEMY". Rev.13:4. This Beast is going to be given great power from Satan according to God's Word. "And the beast which I saw was like a leopard, and his feet were like the feet of a bear, and his mouth like the mouth of a lion; and the dragon gave him his power, and his throne, and great authority." Rev.13:2. This should give us the clue as to who will be in charge when that one world government becomes a reality. It will become a one world government under Satan.

THE ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT, UNDER SATAN

This Dictator will receive his power from Satan and be under the authority of Satan. Rest assured, that Satan did not lose his power when God removed him from his place of authority. The Bible tells us that the Devil is the god of this world system and even now many of the rulers of the nations are under his spell. Throughout the world today we have satanic worshipers and temples to the dragon, so it will be very simple for the whole world to worship Satan. "And they worshiped the Dragon who gave power unto the Beast; and they worshiped the beast, saying,

who is like the Beast? Who is able to make war with him?" Rev.13:4. This great power of the Beast will come from Satan himself, with billions of demons at his command. How long will this Beast be in power? The Bible has the answer. "And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months." Rev.13:5. This Beast under the power of Satan will blaspheme against God as well as destroy many of the tribulation saints. "And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme His name, and His tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to war with the saints, and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the Book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." Rev.13:6-8. This will take place during the second half of the great tribulation and is called, by Daniel and confirmed by Christ, "The Abomination of Desolation", (Dan.9:27; Matt.24:15.)

The satanic "One World Government" has been spoken of in prophecy and in the fullness of time it will be established. This will be the last formal kingdom that Satan master minds. The kingdom of hell will break loose on earth and will be the most devastating corruptness that this world has ever known. We may think that the present world is wicked now, but compared to what is coming, these present conditions are very mild. Note what the Lord has spoken concerning these terrible days. "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except the days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." Matt.24:21-22. This will take place in the latter half of the tribulation as mentioned before and will be Satan's tremendous thrust after Michael the archangel and his army casts Satan and his demons out of heaven. (Rev.9:1-2; Rev.12:7-17.) Satan's power will be used against the tribulation saints and especially against Israel, and the 144,000 Jewish witnesses.

We would classify the flood as the most disastrous event upon the face of the earth, but that is not so. For when the evil forces by the billions make their final stand against God upon Planet Earth, all creation will suffer severely. This earth will experience the greatest death toll of both human beings and animals. This world will pass through the greatest pollution with billions from all nations destroyed. There will be forced worship to both the Beast and Satan. You may ask the question, "Why does God allow Satan and this coming world Dictator to have such power?" As I have said before, I repeat, God has created both angels and mankind with a freedom of choice. God's sovereign is still in control and God's plan and accomplishment will come to pass. There is a restraining power at present, with the Holy Spirit indwelling believers, but when the saints are raptured, "out from" the wrath to come (1 Thess.1:10.), then the final stages of the struggle will dominate world affairs, as the cup of iniquity overflows. God's judgement day is set and is allowing sin to run its course, and when God gets through with it, He will usher in everlasting righteousness. Praise God, for the best is yet to come!

THE DICTATOR OF MIRACLES UNDER SATAN

Under present chaotic conditions in this world of ours, it will take a super dictator with demonic power and world wide capacity and controls to dominate all the nations. He will have to be someone who can prove supernatural might and power to convince the multitudes. Satan will be right there to give ample power with his commanding army of demons. In the

sovereignty of God, permission will be granted to Satan with his added armies of fallen angels to help in this wicked cause. There are fallen angels locked up in the bottomless pit, just waiting to be loosed. Read carefully Revelation 9:1-11. A mighty angel of God gives Satan the key to this bottomless pit where a five star general called "Destroyer" is waiting to be set free. He will be under the command of powerful Satan during the great tribulation. Satan will be able to multiply his evil intent with all of these demons, since he can only be at one place at a time. "The Devil, like a roaring lion walketh about, seeking whom he may devour." 1 Pet.5:8b. He is at present accusing the brethren before the throne of God, day and night. (Rev.12:10.) But he also has great armies of demons who are causing great wickedness. There will also be another army of demons under the Euphrates rive to be released for those terrible days. (Rev.9:13-21. These too will slay one third of all the population during the tribulation. These will number two hundred million.

Satan will gather together his army of demons and godless men with great power and many miracles. He will perform great wonders under the banner of, "The seven heads and ten horns of Revelation 12:3. The whole world will be deceived by this powerful figure and this deception will be manifested by miracles. These miracles will be performed by the false prophet or second Beast. "And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth (From the Promised land to Israel); and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke like a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first Beast before him, and causeth the earth and them who dwell on it to worship the first Beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on earth in the sight of men. And deceiveth them that dwell on earth by means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the Beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the Beast, that had the wound by the sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the Beast that the image of the Beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the Beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and enslaved, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads, and that no man might buy or sell, except he that had the mark, or the name of the Beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the Beast; for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred three score and six." Rev.13:11-18. This 666 will be the Beast's number and the whole world will be subject to him, under the controlling power of Satan.

THE SOVEREIGNTY OF GOD NEVER FAILS

This all would be a very sad ending for mankind if Satan were to continue in such a powerful manner, but praise God we have information that looks beyond the great tribulation. The Lord Himself will invade this world with a mightier power. He will come as The King of kings and Lord of lords, to set up His Eternal Kingdom as prophesied. "And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdom of this world is become the kingdom of our Lord, and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever." Rev.11:15. The thousand year reign of Christ in righteousness will be the final test of all human beings that enter into it, and are born during it. There will be no end of the reign of Christ after the millennium, when the final casting of all the demonic powers into the lake of fire. Then the

great white throne judgement will take place, when the ungodly of all generations will come forth for the second resurrection. They will all be cast into the lake of fire and that area will be sealed off forever, with no escape route. (Rev.20:7-15.) All death and hell shall also be cast into this eternal lake of fire. God has said these judgements are going to happen in the fullness of time, and we better believe what God has said, will come to pass. God has His time for each event and we who believe keep on looking up for our deliverance is drawing near. That will trigger off the seven year tribulation, where Satan will dominate for that brief time.

However the satanic kingdom will continue for the space of the seven years in fulfillment of Daniel's prophecy, which will complete the seventy times seven or 490 years of the Gentile rule. The "One World Government Under Satan" will intensify its evil tactics during the last half of the seven year tribulation. It will become the "Abomination of Desolation", when Satan and his demons will be thrown out of heaven by the Archangel Michael and his army of angels. (Rev.12:7-12.) The Beast will become so powerful under the mighty Satan that he will break the seven year covenant with Israel, and enter the Holy Land, setting up his idols, desecrating the temple which will be built in Jerusalem and persecuting the Jews. (Dan.9:27.) Many of the people of Israel will flee to the hills of Ammon, and receive special protection from God as Christ spoke of and warned the Jews who would be living in that day. (Matt.24:15-22.) The forgotten city of Petra will probably be the very place that will become the city of refuge. These will be the Tribulation saints who will enter into the Kingdom of righteousness in the latter days. There will be a great evangelistic appeal go forth by the 144,000 young Jews, plus angelic hosts from heaven and also Moses and Elijah. These will not be added to the body of Christ to become His bride but will be classified as "Tribulation Saints". There will also be a great slaughter of the tribulation saints that do not flee to the hills, such as the 144,00. who become evangelists during the great tribulation. These that die during the tribulation will take part in the first resurrection, but do not help to make up the body of Christ. The tribulation martyrs will be part of the first resurrection. This powerful one world government under Satan will be activated while the Bride of Christ is enjoying seven wonderful years in the Mansions of their Heavenly Father. (John 14:1-6; 1 Thess.4:13-18.) Under the sovereignty of God, Satan will be upon this earth as the wrath of God also is being poured out upon this sinful world.

In summing up all of this, we are aware of those great and terrible days which lay ahead for all of mankind that has rejected the Lord Jesus Christ. "These things are written that you might have life through His Name. Jn.20:31. You and I have the choice of either being taken out from the wrath to come,

(1 Thess. 1:10.) or go through the most terrible time that this world has ever faced, under the One World Government of Satan. Yes, there will be the chance for those who survive to accept Christ the Messiah, during the tribulation but under the most terrible situations. Is it worth while to wait and put off accepting Christ as your personal Savior, when God has already declared all of this to us in the Bible. May we who know the Lord, send out the warning into the world!

Make no mistake about it, the whole world is being groomed to comply with all the conditions necessary for this One World Government. Great empires of the past desired to attain this dictatorial power but failed. The League of Nations tried through negotiations to accomplish a unified world. The United Nations at this present time is trying to police the whole world. As the Common Market of Europe continues in strength, and Russia divided, the Revival of the Roman Empire will soon come to pass, under the power of Satan. Religions of the world will

play a great part in the formation of this unholy alliance and eventually they too will be destroyed as recorded in Revelation chapter 17 and 18. The present apostate ecumenical churches are well established in politics and will be considered by the Beasts as a great help to establish this one world rule. This apostate religion is revealed in Revelation 17:1-7; and is called "The Great Whore arrayed in purple", who will sit upon the Beast and lead him into great power. Satan will skillfully use this ecumenical religion to control the nations, regardless of their beliefs. That great City of Rome will become the seat of great authority. (Rev.17:18. The seven hills of Rome are mentioned as the seat of the Beast. (Rev.17:9.) This dictator will have great power and be encouraged by the ecumenical religions of the world. They will be promised freedom of religion, until the Beast has the whole world under his power.

Although religion will be one of the Dictator's methods of coming into power, yet he will rely upon his tremendous control of the world's commodities. Religion requires these commodities as does the rest of the world, and with a few privileges granted by the Beast, they will gladly adhere to his policy. However, this apostate ecumenical religious organization, with all of its wealth, prestige and influence, will fall into the satanic trap and never rise again. "And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the Great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of demons, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are grown rich through the abundance of her delicacies." Rev.18:2-3. This can only apply to the present mystery Babylon of Rome which has taken the place of the original Babylon of long ago. This also is in keeping with the Revival of the Roman Empire. The judgement upon this world religious system will come directly from God. "How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so torment and sorrow give her; for she saith in her heart, I sit a Queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire; for strong is the Lord who judgeth her." Rev.18:7-8.

Satan is the sum total of death and hell, and all ungodly acts. He is powerful and when cast out of heaven will make his last stronghold upon earth and use every resource available to maintain his power. However, he is under the sovereignty of God and an Almighty God who knows the end from the beginning. There is nothing hidden from our Living God and He knows every thought and intent of Satan. We will see how Satan tries to disrupt God's plans of all ages, and attempts to establish a great "One World Government" upon this earth and above all, he desires to destroy the Messianic hope. This has been his aim down through the ages and we will continue our study with these points in mind. There are several strategic attacks that Satan attempts upon the plans of God, as he uses various methods to accomplish his purpose. These will be brought out in the following studies. Make no mistake about the power of Satan, which God has never taken away from him. He is the Prince of the power of the air, and he often comes as an angel of light to those who are weak or lack the knowledge of the Word of God. We would utterly fail apart from God the Holy Spirit being our ever present help. God has placed a hedge about our lives as Saints and we need to constantly allow the Word of God to control our lives and direct our paths in the way of righteousness. Apply first John chapter one and verse 9 to our daily life. Do not grieve the Holy Spirit, but allow Him to keep on filling your life.

There is much work to be done in these last days, as we see the clouds forming. "This know, also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God, Having a form of godliness, but denying the power of it; from such turn away." 2 Tim.3:1-5. We are not left here upon earth to help bring in the kingdom, but rather to recruit precious souls to be ready for the kingdom. Christ alone can bring in the kingdom, and that will require a "Rod of Iron"! As Christ the Eternal Son of God was sent forth to remove the barrier of sin, making possible the Gospel, so we are sent forth to proclaim this Gospel to the ends of the world. "And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All authority is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the age. Amen." Matt.28:18-20. We as believers have been sent forth to fulfill that great commission with this marvelous and wonderful Gospel! Many precious souls whom you and I know are trusting in their religion to see them into a wonderful eternity, but all this is in vain! Only the Eternal Son of God, who broke the barrier of sin can make the way and truth and life possible for whosoever believeth. (Jn.14:6.) "Neither is their salvation in any other; for there is no other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:12. God is not a God of confusion, nor delusion and "Thus saith the Lord" giving us His declaration! God's policy and provision remains the same, regardless of our cultural backgrounds. There are many in every generation, "Having a form of godliness, but denying the power of it; from such turn away." 2 Tim.3:5. God has made a way for all who will come to Jesus!

As we have been studying Satan's power quite extensively, it is to emphasize the importance of depending upon the Holy Spirit through the Word of God to overcome this powerful creature. God has provided sufficient armor to combat all evil forces, but we must learn how to use it in order to defeat the enemy of our souls. "Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Eph.6:11-12. God has not provided us with armor for our backs, as we do not run away when attacked by the evil forces. We stand and use the mighty defence which God has provided in the Bible. God has not promised that we will be free from suffering, but He has promised to sustain us, when the trials come our way. "In this ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold trials, that the trial of your faith being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ," 1 Pet.1:6-7. All of the disciples suffered greatly as they preached the gospel and taught the Word. Note what Paul reported to Timothy, "For which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless, I am not ashamed; for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed unto Him against that day. Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Spirit, who dwelleth in us." 2 Tim.1:12-14.

God has provided every essential protection for those whom He sends forth with the glorious Gospel. As you commit your entire life to the Lord, and acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths. (Prov.8:6.) Since God the Holy Spirit dwells within you, rest assured, "But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things." 1 Jn.2:20. This does not mean that just because God the Holy Spirit indwells you that you are not in need of studying the Word. What it does mean is that with God the Holy Spirit dwelling within you, you then have the potentiality of spiritual understanding as you study under the leadership of the Holy Spirit. "Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are His; and, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity." 2 Tim.2:19. As God had placed a hedge around Job who was upright before God. (Job 1:8-10), so as you seek to do the will of God, your life is completely surrounded by the mighty power of God. The sovereignty of God, supersedes the all the power that the evil forces can gather against Him.

THE GREATER POWER OF THE BELIEVERS

As we close this study concerning this powerful fallen angel called Satan, the Devil, and the Serpent, may we remind ourselves that it is absolutely impossible to make a stand against him, without the helping hand of Almighty God. We have been given sufficient armor to counteract his powerful self as well as his billions of fallen angels, called demons. May I list these powerful instruments which God has provided for every believer. Without them, you would utterly fall under the creature called Satan and his army of demons.

1. **By the new birth you have become a new creature in Christ Jesus, the Eternal Son of God. (2 Cor.5:17; Jn.3:5-7.)**
2. **The indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. (Jn.14:16-17.)**
3. **Direct identification with God the Holy Spirit by baptism of the Holy Spirit. (1 Cor.12:13.)**
4. **Greater power within you than in the whole world. (1 Jn.4:4.)**
5. **God the Holy Spirit is our inward prayer warrior. (Rom.8:26-27.)**
6. **We as believers have our great High Priest who has entered into the Holy of Holies once and forever. (Heb.2:17-18; Heb.4:14-16; Heb.8:1; Heb.9:24-28.)**
7. **We as believers have an Eternal Advocate. Jesus Christ the righteous. (1 Jn.2:1-2.)**
8. **We as believers have the eternal anointing. 1 Jn.2:27.**
9. **God has given to us a complete armor to withstand the fiery darts of Satan. (Eph.6:11-16.)**

- 10 God has provided us with the Bible to be studied, with the promise that God the Holy Spirit would guide and teach us the things of God. (Eph.6:17; Jn.16:13; Rom.8:14.)**
- 11. We as believers are to keep on being filled by the Holy Spirit to withstand the evil forces and become strong in the Lord. (Eph.3:19.)**
- 12. God the Holy Spirit is ready to give you special gifts and make you strong in the Lord. (1 Cor.12:11.)**

CONCLUSION

Believers today need to be alerted as to the enemy's tactics. Satan wants the believers to doubt what the Bible declares and cause them to trust in the human viewpoint. When God's servants of old would take the situation in their own hands, they always failed. We need to use every provision that God has provided to stand against this powerful Satan. We need to constantly depend upon God's Word, and our paths will be directed. (Prov, 3:6.) We cannot accomplish this alone, but we need to listen to the voice of God the Holy Spirit as He guides us through the Word of God. It is of the greatest importance that we listen to the voice of the Holy Spirit, as we search the Scriptures. "Thus Saith The Lord"! "Beloved, believe not every spirit, but test the spirits whether they are of God; because many false prophets are gone out into the world." 1 Jn.4:1.

The following warning is very important to Christians who are faced with all sorts of strange calls. "Be ye, therefore, followers of God, as dear children; and walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given Himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling savor. But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not fitting; but, rather, giving of thanks. For this ye know, that no fornicator, nor unclean person, nor covetous man (who is an idolater) hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. Let no man deceive you with vain words; for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the sons of disobedience. Be not ye, therefore, partakers with them. For ye were once darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord; walk as children of light. For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth, proving what is acceptable unto the Lord." Eph.5:1-10.

May I list the various ways in which God has prepared us as Christians to stand against the wiles of the devil. These are very important for us to have a successful Christian life in this wicked world.

- 1. The new birth is necessary. (John 3:3-7; 1 Cor.12:13; Jn.14:16-17.)**
- 2. Confess ones sins and keep on being cleansed by God. (1 Jn.1:9.)**
- 3. Being led by God the Holy Spirit.(Gal.5:18.)**
- 4. Established in the Word of God. (Jn.16:13; 2 Tim.2:15.)**

5. Do not grieve God the Holy Spirit. (Eph.4:30.)
6. Do not quench the Holy Spirit's power in your life. (1 Tim.5:19.)
7. Keep the carnal fleshly man subjected to the spiritual man. (1 Cor.3:1-3; 2 Cor.10:4.)
8. Put on the whole armor of God. (Eph.6:11-18.)
9. Keep in spiritual fellowship with those of like faith. (1 Jn.1:7.)
10. Forsake not the assembling together. (Heb.10:25.)
11. Manifest the fruit of God the Holy Spirit. (Gal.5:22-23.)
12. Crucify the flesh with the affections and lust. (Gal.5:24.)
13. Walk in the guidance of the Holy Spirit. (Gal.5:25; Rom.8:14.)
14. Desire to glorify the Lord in your life, rather than selfish vain glory. (Gal.5:26.)

These are important features to be found in staunch and mature Christians. Spend time alone with God and allow Him to speak to you. God has provided ample protection for every believer, as we face the battle against Satan and his demons. Always remember that, "Ye are of God, little children and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4. "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that are in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust of it; but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever." 1 Jn.2:15-17.

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER TWO

- 1. When Lucifer became Satan, where did he and the fallen angels set up their kingdom? Scripture please.**
- 2. Give an Old Testament example of an attempted "One World Order". Scripture, and explain.**
- 3. Explain how socialism is helping to bring in a none world order.**
- 4. What are some of the ways in which a "One World Government" under Satan can be accomplished?**
- 5. List four great empires of the past that dominated the world.**
- 6. What does the Word of God say about the "Revival of the Roman Empire"?**
- 7. What heavenly battle will take place before "The Abomination of Desolation"? Give Scripture to prove your answer.**
- 8. What do nations fear and dread above everything?
Will this fear help determine a "One World Dictator"?**
- 9. Name some of the "World Blocs" of today.**
- 10. Write briefly on the subject, "The Rejection Of God".**
- 11. How is the world becoming "Interdependent"?**
- 12. Who separated the Nations? How? Why?**
- 13. Does God require Believers to separate themselves? Scripture.**
- 14. Explain "Total Involvement" of the nations.**
- 15. Explain the aspiration of national leaders.**
- 16. How will "One World Government" be formed?**
- 17. Does Satan claim the world as his domain? Explain with Scripture.**
- 18. Explain Ezekiel 28:11-15.**

- 19. With mankind's freedom of choice apart from God, down through the ages, please write briefly on what he has or has not accomplished.**
- 20. Explain how the World of nations is being brought together under the United Nations, for a Satanic "One World Government".**
- 21. Write briefly on "The Final Break Through of Satan", to establish his complete control of this world after the Rapture takes place.**
- 22. Write an essay on, "Satan's Power". Quote Scripture as well.**
- 23. Write briefly on, The Coming One World Under Satan".**
- 24. Write briefly on, "The Sovereignty of God".**
- 25. How do we counteract the tremendous power of Satan? Give Scripture.**
- 26. Give some Biblical proofs concerning the statement in First John 4:4. that "Greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world.**
- 27. Name 12 provisions that God has provided the believer with, in order to withstand the evil forces.**

CHAPTER THREE



SATAN'S AIM

CHAPTER THREE

SATAN'S AIM

A. TO DISRUPT GOD'S PLANS

Lucifer, being full of all wisdom, as the anointed cherub of God was aware of the absolute perfection of God and desired to be like Him. He had been given a great command with a great army of angels, but he wanted more than this. He disobeyed His Creator and fell into sin, desiring more than he had, and reaching the peak of his selfish desires, as he wished to be like the Most High God. (Isa.14:14.) God had to remove him from his duties as the chief cherub, and one third of all of the angels, who followed him in this rebellion, had to be relieved of their duty. Some of these demons are in chains of darkness (Jude 6), others are under the Euphrates River (Rev.9:13-21), and there is another whole army of demons in the Bottomless Pit (Rev.9:1-11). Lucifer became Satan, the Devil and the Serpent. The other fallen angels became demons. This all set the battle in array. God in His sovereignty and Mighty power could have removed every rebellious angel, and placed them in annihilation. Then God could have made an obedient angelic hosts, and mankind, as robots without choice if He had wanted to do so. But God desired a creation with choice and with a desire for the good of all. This choice was essential, so that God could separate sin once and forever. Sin has to run its course so that it can be judged and put away forever. This will solve the sin question and eventually the new heavens and the new earth, will be free from sin forever. God has a marvelous future plan, as he allows sin to run its course, and make an eternal judgement upon it. This will clear the way to set up an eternal kingdom of righteousness where sin will never appear again. (Dan.9:24.) Satan is trying his very best to disrupt God's plans, using that God given wisdom and power, with an army of billions of demons to help him to accomplish it. One great argument that Satan may have, is to gather billions of unregenerate human beings together to follow him and force the hand of God to spare all because of the vast majority of those condemned with Satan. A careful student of the Bible will discover, that Satan continually uses the same tactics over and over again, to defeat the plan of God. He is fully aware of what is going on, and although he can only be in one place at a time, he does have billions of demons at his command. Although Satan thinks that he is destroying God's plan of the ages, God has taken into account each counter action that Satan will use. God is immutable and never needs to change His original plans having perfect omniscience, as to ever problem that can possibly arise. This causes Satan and his demons constant failure, and may we review some of these failures of the past. Satan may have a great opinion of himself, but he is a created being and under the authority of Almighty God, His Creator. Our Living God has full knowledge of Satan's plans, and knows every thought that he and his demons have. This coming "One World Government, Under Satan", is but another effort of Satan to increase the number of human persons to follow his rebellion against God. Satan has tried just about every tactic in the past to defeat and disrupt God's plans. Let us examine some of the failures of Satan in the past.

THE FAILURES OF SATAN IN THE PAST AGES

CONVINCING POWER AMONG THE ANGELS

Since we have discussed this phase of rebellion, may I just make a few passing remarks as to this dreadful act of Satan. One out of every three angels of God were persuaded by Satan to disobey their Creator. (Rev.12:4.) This great body of demons led by Satan, set up their kingdom of darkness upon planet earth. There were some of these fallen angels so vicious that God had to put them in chains of darkness, as mentioned before (Jude 6.). Others have been locked up in the bottomless pit and under the Euphrates river until the great tribulation. (Rev.9:1-11; Rev.9:13-21.) These are not small issues that had to be dealt with by the sovereignty of God. We will deal with some of these issues as we see how Satan continually tried to disrupt God's plans of all ages. The Bible is filled with examples of how many of the saints overcame the evil forces and there are also examples of how many have failed to overcome the devil in their lives. Always remember that the devil is a student of the Bible and is constantly looking for ways and means to prevent God's plans, or to make a counterfeit move against God and the saints. Our very early example of Satan attempting to destroy the seed of the woman through the murder of Abel by Cain. Let us examine this incident.

THE DEATH OF ABEL

When Satan the Serpent heard God's condemnation upon him, that the seed of the woman would bruise his head (Gen.3:15.), he straight way did his best to have that seed removed by death. (Gen.4:8-11.) At this stage of the godless struggle, Satan did not realize that the seed of the woman referred to a virgin birth. God had gained another mile stone in His eternal plan. "By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and by it he being dead yet speaketh." Heb.11:4. There is one thing that Satan became aware of with his deception and that was the power that he had to indwell human being, directly or indirectly . (Cain and Lamech Gen.4:8; Gen.4:23.)

SATANIC TACTICS

One of the best examples of the power of Satan under the sovereignty of God is what happened to Job that Old Testament saint. The record of the Book of Job, dates way back before the flood and perhaps in the period of faithful Enoch. Naturally, we are prone to consider much of the Christian suffering as a punishment from God, but that is not so. Job is an excellent example of the testing that can come to the saints of God. Satan tried his best to destroy the testimony of Job, and even penetrated into his family, Job's wife was such an example. (Job 1:9-10.) The point that I wish to make is the power that Satan has available but always under the sovereignty of God.

There are some of Satan's great armies in the bottomless pit (Rev.9:1-11.) There are some under the Euphrates river (Rev.9:13-21.) These shall eventually be released during the Abomination of Desolation, which is the latter half of the great tribulation. There are some of

his demons that were so vile and wicked that they had to be placed in chains under darkness until their final sentence to the lake of fire. (Jude 6.) However, Satan has his billions of fallen angels at his command and will destroy when they have permission from God. Satan is their master and he continually goes to and fro upon the face of the earth, seeking whom he may devour. (1 Pet.5:8.)

In the case of Job, whom God could say, "There was none like him in the whole earth, a perfect and upright man, who feared God." (Job 1:8; Job 2:3) What we do learn from this Scripture is, "God is in Command"! All angelic hosts have to appear before the Lord to report their activities. Satan cannot do one thing without the direct permission from God. (Job.1:6-12; Job 2:1-7.) This was not a light test that Job went through being a multi-millionaire, and Satan took everything away from him and left him only with an evil wife. But God, restored to Job a double portion as well as a new family.

DEMON POSSESSION OF MANKIND NECESSITATED A FLOOD

Satan has great wisdom and continually tries to out smart his Creator, but all in vain. God in His omniscience is aware of everything before it comes to pass. The infiltration of the demons into mankind was a master stroke of Satan's, for had it been completed among all the human beings, then the whole race of mankind would have been corrupt and become a part of his domain. God had to destroy all but eight souls to protect His promise. God gave the ungodly 120 years to hear Noah preach, but they rejected the message and considered Noah as a fool. This was but another evidence that Satan was working hard to not only deceive these people but also to cause demon possession. God kept the Messianic hope alive through the lineage of Shem.

UNGODLY IN THE TIME OF ENOCH AND JOB

God did not leave the lives of Adam and Eve in the hands of the serpent, to do as he wished, but sought them, clothed them and covered them with the first sacrifice. Enoch being the seventh generation from Adam could read and write and proclaimed the righteousness of God in his life. We do not have the complete writings of Enoch which must have been destroyed when Jerusalem was burned with fire in 70 A.D. Satan out numbered God with his earthly followers, but God does not depend upon numbers, but rather upon His eternal power, which is greater than every circumstance. We learn from Job, how the Devil has to depend entirely upon the permissive will of God to do his damage. As Satan, that serpent accused Job before God, so he continues down through the ages to accuse all of the brethren, day and night. (Rev.12:10.) But praise God we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous! (1 Jn.2>1-2.) We also have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit who continually prays for us. (Rom.8:26-28.) Also , as with Job, there is a constant hedge about our lives and as believers we can fully depend upon Almighty God to provide all the protection necessary.

THE LINEAGE OF SHEM CHOSEN, ABRAM CALLED, SARAH BARREN

The promises of God are sure and steadfast, regardless of the circumstances. Satan became aware that Abram was God's man, and was to be blessed among all nations. Under the

permissive will of God, Sarah remained barren and the Devil attempted to leaven the lineage with the Ishmael scheme, but it did not work. The Arabs to this day are a threat to Israel as they were a threat to the Messianic hope, but "God is always aware, and by Himself He swears!" Our God is the God of the impossible and nothing is too hard for Him. Sarah was on a continual line of attack as she almost was left in Egypt as a wife of the pharaoh. (Gen.12:10-20.) We can also consider Lot as another instrument in Satan's hands as his men contended with Abram's and he chose the choice lands for himself which became useless to him as Lot pitched his tent toward Sodom. (Gen.13:5-11.) "Abram dwelt in the land of Canaan, and Lot dwelt in the cities of the plain, and pitched his tent toward Sodom. But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the Lord exceedingly." Gen.13:12-13. Lot did away with his herding as no doubt his men went into Sodom and joined the wicked, as well as some of his own family fell to the domain of Satan. But God was mindful of Abram. (Gen.13:14-18.) God defeated Satan's plans and blessed Abram abundantly with a Son Isaac, and a grandson Jacob, and with the twelve tribes of Israel. As we read on in the Book of Genesis, we see the loving hand of the Lord upon Abram. "And the Lord said unto Abram, after Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward, For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed forever. And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth, so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered. Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; for I will give it unto thee. Then Abram removed his tent, and came and dwelt by the oaks of Mamre, which is in Hebron, and built an altar unto the Lord." Gen.13:14-18. God kept Abram and his family from the contamination of Sodom, and although Satan desired the corruption of Abram, God placed a hedge about his life, protecting the Messianic promise as Abram believed God and it was counted for righteousness. (Gen.15:3-6; Rom.4:3.)

It is noteworthy to mention the offering of Isaac, (Gen.22:1-18.) This would have pleased the Devil, had Isaac been slain, and he was no doubt behind the scenes as he was with Job, challenging God to test Abraham. "By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered up Isaac; and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, of whom it was said, In Isaac shall thy seed be called; Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead, from which also he received him in a figure." Heb.11:17-19.

THE CORRUPTION OF THE TRIBE OF DAN

This was a very subtle move of Satan to use Dan to introduce idols into Israel, hoping to destroy the Messianic hope. The history recorded of Israel does show the results of having other gods and forsaking their living God. Jacob in his final predictions of his sons declared a terrible accusation against Dan. "Dan shall judge his people, as one of the tribes of Israel. Dan shall be a serpent by the way, an adder in the path, that biteth the horse heels, so that his rider shall fall backward." Gen.49:16-17. Note also, "And the children of Dan set up the carved image;" Judg.18:30a.

There is also an important Scripture relating to the 144,000 of the 12 tribes of Israel. Joseph's son, Manasseh has taken the place of Dan. Even though we do not know, according to the Scripture, from what tribe the antichrist will come, we can judge that he will come from the tribe of Dan. The antichrist has to be a Jew to be declared as the deliverer for Israel. "And

I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke like a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them who dwell on it to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men. And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, that had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he hath power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. Rev.13:11-15. Note the similarity with Judges 18:30a. Satan desires to use every means possible to try and defeat God's plans of all ages, but will fail. Yes, corruption was the downfall of Israel, over and over again with the help of Satan, but God always had a way out, to protect the Messianic hope.

ESAU REJECTED BY GOD, JACOB CHOSEN

Esau being the first born of the twins should have inherited the birthright, but God in His omniscience, knew what Esau would choose to do, and rejected him. "Esau took wives of the daughters of Canaan:" Gen.36:2a. Satan was using Esau, who became the father of the Edomites, to refuse passage through their land as Israel journeyed from Egypt to the Promised Land. (Num.20:21.) God chose Jacob through which "the seed of the woman" would come to defeat the power of Satan. Jacob was chosen to bear the torch of the Redeemer to come. The tribe of Judah was miraculously kept, even through Rahab the harlot, Ruth marrying the kinsman redeemer Boaz. Satan tried his best in many other ways to destroy the chosen race of Israel but failed. Our God knows the end from the beginning and never needs to change His plans.

THE SEED OF THE WOMAN MAINTAINED

The prophecy and birth of the Messiah is an outstanding example of God's directing power. From God's words in the garden of Eden of Genesis. 3:15. to Galatians 4:4-5 we have the perfect plan of God fulfilled. "But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons." Gal.4:4-5. Satan had access to the Bible as he was able to quote from the Bible, tempting Christ to bow down and worship him, and he would give Him the kingdoms of the world. (Matt 4:1-11.) A great provision of God was in the choice of both Joseph and Mary through which the Messiah would enter this world. They both were of the tribe of Judah, and it was Joseph's lineage that brought them to the right place at the right time. Bethlehem of Judah was the place where the Christ child was to be born. "But thou, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel, whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting." Mic.5:2. The virgin Mary brought forth the Christ child in the fullness of time in Bethlehem Ephrathah. (Matt.1:18-25; Lk.1:26-38; Lk.2:1-7; Jn.1:1-2,14.) When Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judah, that was but His way of entering into this world. "For as much as ye know ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver and gold, from your vain manner

of life received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as a lamb without blemish and without spot, Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you," 1 Pet.1:18-20. I just want you to think for a moment just what the Creator of all things did to deal with sin. Before He made the universe, or before He made human beings, He shaped a body like unto ours and then stepped into it limiting Himself, being made subject to the Holy Spirit and became the sacrifice for sin. We cannot fathom the depth of love that our Redeemer has gone to, in order to save our souls! The Eternal Son of God became the Incarnate, 100% God and 100% man, to deal with sin once and forever.

THE SLAUGHTER OF CHILDREN BY HEROD

This was another onslaught by Satan to destroy the Christ Child, but with the omniscience of God, the Christ child had special protection in the land of Egypt. The far East was alerted to the coming of the Messiah and the wise men came and paid their homage with royal gifts. This alerted Satan to destroy the Christ Child, but God gave ample warning to Joseph to flee at the right time. (Matt.2:1-18.) Satan meant it for their destruction, but God used this occasion to alert the people as to why these poor innocent children were being slain. Satan's search for the Messiah with the desire to destroy Him was again thwarted.

God did not have to make any adjustments to His plan, for He even had it in writing that there would be great weeping in Ramah for the children. "Thus saith the Lord, A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, and bitter weeping; Rachel, weeping for her children, refused to be comforted for her children, because they were not." Jer.31:15. It is also encouraging to read the following verse as to the hope of resurrection which these children will have. "Thus saith the Lord, Restrain thy voice from weeping, and thine eyes from tears; for thy work shall be rewarded, saith the Lord, and they shall come again from the land of the enemy. And there is hope in thine end, saith the Lord, that thy children shall come again to their own border." Jer.31:16-17. Satan can only go so far and no further in the economy of our Eternal God. Yes, Satan has great power and billions of demons under his command, BUT GOD is sovereign over all. The following study of John the Baptist is of great importance in understanding God's great eternal plan.

THE MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST AND JESUS

The birth of John the Baptist was with great significance with Elizabeth being barren. (Lk.1:5-7.) John the Baptist was a substitute and spirit of Elijah, who was to come to herald the kingdom of God. God in His omniscience, knew that Israel would reject her Messiah, and so He sent John, as his substitute until the kingdom would come in reality. Yes, God will send Elijah at the appointed time, during the Abomination of Desolation, just before Christ will return and set up His kingdom of righteousness. (Rev.11:3-6.) Satan thought that he was defeating God's plans when John the Baptist was placed in prison and finally beheaded. In spite of this satanic power, many went out to hear the message of John the Baptist, as he presented the baptism of repentance for the kingdom. Many repented and were baptized in preparation for the kingdom. Christ Himself came out to be identified with these preparations for the kingdom,

and was baptized. John the Baptist had but a short ministry of six and one half months. Satan was confused even more so when he was allowed to tempt Christ in the wilderness under the most severe conditions. When one realizes that the Eternal Son of God left His home in glory to come down to earth and be subjected to the most severe testings, you cannot help but marvel in so great salvation which God has prepared before the foundations of the world. Satan tried his best to have the Eternal Son of God, take a short cut in gaining the kingdoms of this world, but he failed! (Matt.4:1-11; Mk.1:12-13; Lk.4:1-13.) This was not the end of testings by Satan for Jesus would be exposed to these testings throughout His earthly ministry. His whole life was continually threatened by the power of Satan, day and night, but was kept by the power of God the Holy Spirit. Satan would come as an angel of light, trying to use the disciples with their suggestions, but he failed. We have as our Savior an impeccable second person of the Trinity, praise His holy name!

THE TRIAL OF CHRIST AND HIS CRUCIFIXION

The Lord Jesus Christ knew every step of such a procedure as He went to the cross. It was for this purpose that He came into the world. He knew that He would be surrounded by these demons. "All they who see me laugh me to scorn; they shoot out their lip, they shake the head, saying, He trusted on the Lord that He would deliver Him; let Him deliver Him, seeing He delighted in Him.Be not far from me; for trouble is near; for there is none to help. Many bulls have compassed me; strong bull of Bashan have beset me round. They gaped upon me with their mouths, like a ravening and a roaring lion.

For dogs have compassed me; the assembly of the wicked have enclosed me; they pierced my hands and my feet." Ps.22:7-16. This is but a portion of what has been foretold by God as to what would happen to His Eternal Son. In the permissive will of God the evil forces were doing their best to break the plans of God, but each time, they failed. Satan then and until now has tried his utmost to disrupt God's plans of salvation, through the believers.

The trials of Christ by the Sanhedrin, Herod and Pontius Pilate, were all illegal, condemning Christ before He was tried. Satan and his demons seemed to be getting the upper hand, but this was all according to God's plans and nothing had to be altered. Satan knows that God will eventually bring in His righteous kingdom upon this earth, and he is attempting to do everything to prevent it. We have seen sufficient evidence from the Bible as to how Satan has been trying to disrupt God's plans and has always failed. Let us see what Satan has been doing to establish his own mighty power upon this earth. God is allowing Satan to join the nations together for a one world government, giving the unregenerate their choice since they have rejected God's choice. We must remember that Satan is in charge of "Spiritual Wickedness in High places", and the ecumenical world of religions will greatly contribute to his plans.

ACCUSING THE BELIEVERS BEFORE THE THRONE OF GOD

The Book of Job is an ideal example of how all of the subjects of God must give an account of their actions. God is sovereign over all of His creation and demands a report. "Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them." Job.1:6. This is not a one time occurrence but continually. "And I

heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ; for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, who accused them before our God day and night." Rev.12:10. If we , as believers, were to depend upon earning our salvation, then we also would be condemned with Satan, but praise God, we stand upon the righteousness of the Lord Jesus Christ, who is our Advocate as well as the propitiation for our sins. (1 Jn.1:1-2.) Yes, we are constantly being accused by Satan, but praise God for our Great High Priest in heaven who has presented His blood once and forever in our behalf. He is our advocate before the Father, and we continually come before God, confessing our sins (1 Jn.1:9.), and they are forgiven on the bases of the precious blood of Christ, which was shed for our sins. This is all by the marvelous and glorious grace of God!

Another wonderful protection that we have as believers is the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. He also is making intercession for us in such a manner beyond the words of our language. "Likewise, the Spirit also helpeth our infirmity; for we know not what we should pray for as we ought; but the Spirit Himself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And He that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because He maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God." Rom.8:26-27. Such statements from the Word of God defeats the power of Satan in our lives, as we apply God's Word to our lives.

B. TO ESTABLISH A ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT

We have dealt with this some what in the past, but now we want to approach this "One World Government" from the Divine viewpoint. There is no way that we can guess what is coming through crystal balls, or sooth sayings, but we must get our entire information from the Bible as we compare these truths with the developments in this world. It will take us through the final stages of the great tribulation. This study is very important to the believers, as we need to be aware of the present events leading up to the establishment of this "One World Government." Satan constantly is trying to confuse mankind, and attempting to persuade God to repent and eradicate the coming judgements. Satan will fail with every coming event and praise God, the Lord is the Alpha and the Omega and is our all in all. Satan will set up his counterfeit kingdom which we will now study. May we remind ourselves that Satan has tremendous power as the prince of the power of the air. He has the control of the unregenerate minds, throughout the whole world. We are seeing more and more of this evidence in most of the nations around the world. Some of these nations, Satan has had under his control for ages, but he will lose all in the fullness of God's time. The restraining power of God the Holy Spirit is our mighty force at work, while we fill that great commission. However, when the rapture takes place, that restraining power of the Holy Spirit will be lifted and this world will be persuaded by Satan and his demons to believe his lies. The whole world will become the kingdom of Satan through the revival of the Roman Empire in it's fullness, as it spreads world wide This is by no means a lot of guess work, but rather by the predictions of God's Holy Bible. This is what we now want to study, not according to the human viewpoint, but rather by the Divine viewpoint according to the teaching of the Word of God. Satan is very much alive and working his evil content, but controlled by the sovereignty of God.

WHAT DOES THE BIBLE SAY CONCERNING THE KINGDOM OF SATAN?

When the Rapture takes place, this will be the clue for the evil forces to have freedom in their evil practices, nevertheless they will still be under the sovereignty of God. However, the Holy Spirit who is restraining the evil forces at this present time from doing their extreme wickedness. But when the fullness of time comes for the saints of God to be taken out from the tribulation wrath to come (1 Thess.1:10.), then the beginning of sorrows will be manifested. Men will cry out to the rocks to fall upon them and end it all. "And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every slave, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains, and said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. For the great day of His wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?" Rev.6:15-17. The unregenerate people of the earth will not only have to face the terrible onslaught of Satan, but above all the wrath of God will be poured out upon this earth and eventually will destroy it, making all things new.

The Disciples asked the Lord, "Tell us, when shall these things be?" Matt.24:3b. There will be great deception as those terrible days of Satan are anticipated upon the earth. (Matt.24:4.) There will be a restraining power of the Holy Spirit before the Rapture takes place. (2 Thess.2:1-12.) Many will come under this deception with strong delusion, as Satan prepares to take over during the last half of the great tribulation. This is called by Daniel, "The Abomination of Desolation". (Dan.9:27.) The Lord also confirms it. (Matt.24:15.) These will be the most terrible days that this world has ever known. (Matt.24:21.) As a prelude to all of this there will continue to be wars and rumors of wars. (Matt.24:6-8.) There will be many false prophets, and sin shall be the order of the day. (Matt.24:11-12.) After the saints are raptured out of this world then under the most difficult circumstances, the Kingdom teachings will be proclaimed by the 144,000, Moses and Elijah, and the angel with the everlasting Gospel to be preached. (Matt.24:14; Rev.7:4-8; Rev.11:3-13; Rev.14:6.) In every age, God manifests His marvelous grace, and makes a way of escape from the wrath to come. It was Elijah the prophet that thought he was alone in the worship of God. (1 Ki.19:10,14.) God had to show Elijah that He was not frustrated or dependent upon outward power, but all that was necessary was "A still small voice", 1 Ki.19:12b. "Yet I have left me seven thousand in Israel, all the knees which have not bowed unto Ba'al, and every mouth which hath not kissed him." 1 Ki.19:18. Regardless of the situation God is our realization, as we live a life of dedication, being sanctified in and through Christ. This world is not and will not get better, until the Lord Himself descends and rules in righteousness, by the means of a "Rod of Iron". Until then, we can expect world affairs to deteriorate morally and although suppressed and restrained by the Holy Spirit at present, they will be ready to accept all evil forces available.

THE KINGDOM OF HELL BREAKS LOOSE UPON THIS EARTH

It is not just a passing remark that we hear from the Lord Jesus Christ, when He describes the Tribulation as the most terrible catastrophe that will ever happen in the creation of all ages. (Matt.24:21-22.) Almighty God has to shorten the daylight hours to prevent a total devastation.

Let us turn to Revelation chapter six for some of the highlights of what this world will be going through, after our "Air Lift" to the heavenly mansions of God the Father. We who are the saints of God will be in our heavenly mansions during this terrible devastation which will take place upon the earth. We of the age of grace which is also known as the mystery age, will be safely gathered together in heaven, awaiting that marriage to The Lamb of God, as His specially chosen bride. This world system of sin and debauchery, will then face head on the satanic degradation, without restraint, but under the sovereignty of God.

THE FIRST SEAL

THE WHITE HORSE

The appearance of the white horse during the Tribulation will be a counterfeit as to the coming of Christ to establish His kingdom of righteousness. (Rev.19:11-21.) "And I saw and, behold a white horse; and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer." Rev.6:2. The Beast who will be the Dictator of the Revived Roman Empire will go forth with great power and none shall be able to stand before him. (Rev.13:4.) No details are given here of the extent of his might and potential destruction, but the whole revelation is given throughout Revelation seven through eighteen. We also have some of the detail given in other parts of the Bible. The Beast will ride the horse to a temporary victory, deceiving the people of all nations, with a false peace offered to all.

THE SECOND SEAL

THE RED HORSE

When that second seal is opened by the Lord in heaven and in our presence, there will be the following scene. "And there went out another horse that was red; and power was given to him that sat on it to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given him a great sword." Rev.6:4. The peace that the earthly people anticipated was turned into a bloody war among themselves, as they will kill each other. We cannot fathom the extent of this killing, but we must remember that God is now allowing the total depravity of mankind to have free course with iniquity.

THE THIRD SEAL

THE BLACK HORSE

The aftermath of war always brings famine and distress with the economy of nations depleted. The growing of crops has been stopped with total war and the supplies of food are limited. "And when He had opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, Come. And I beheld and, lo, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand." Rev.6:5. This of course relates to us a scarcity of food and it must be carefully measured out. By this time, the whole world will be computerized and everything will be under lock and key.

Today we do have famines in various places around the world, but we still have plenty of food to cope with it and supplies are still plentiful. But during the early part of the tribulation there will be a continual enslavement through the scarcity of food. The amazing thing will be that the Revived Roman Empire will have the majority of food supplies under its control through total registration with the use of computers. Those that control the food, will also be able to control the world affairs under a tremendous power. The card system of purchasing will no doubt be in full control of all of the commodities around the world. Praise God the Rapture will deliver us out from the wrath to come!

THE FOURTH SEAL

THE PALE HORSE

The sign of death will be everywhere with over a billion people dying in various ways, by sword, by hunger, by disease and death, and by the wild beasts. When that fourth seal is opened by the Lord in our presence, here is what will happen. "And I looked and, behold, a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hades followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth." Rev.6:8. These creatures will die in various ways and their destination will be Hades, to await their final White Throne Judgement and be cast into the Lake of Fire. To visualize these events causes one to shudder at the terrible things to come upon those who have been rejecting the Eternal Son of God. "He that believeth on Him is not condemned; but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God." Jn.3:18.

TRIBULATION SAINTS WILL BE MARTYRED

During the total Tribulation, God will have His witnesses and they will receive the seal of God upon their foreheads. This will be the way that God will put a hedge about their lives during the Tribulation. "And I saw another angel ascending from the East, having the seal of the living God; and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea, saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads. And I heard the number of them which were sealed; and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel." Rev.7:2-3. These will not receive the mark of the Beast and will be deprived of food, clothing and shelter for they will neither be able to buy nor sell without his 666. (Rev.13:17.) Inventory of all foods and other commodities will be available to the Beast through the computerized records. These witnesses' lives will be under constant danger the majority of them will be slain.

God will use these witnesses, and others who become tribulation saints to spread the Gospel of the kingdom during those terrible days. Many will be martyred, as they preach the gospel in spite of the threat of death. Some tribulation saints will flee to the hills as admonished by the Lord. "When ye, therefore, shall see the Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place (whosoever readeth, let him understand), then let them who are

in Judea flee into the mountains;" Matt.24:15-16. This will take place during the second half of the seven years of Tribulation, when the Beast breaks the covenant with Israel and Satan personally takes over the controls through the Beast, with a great slaughter of the earthly people. Those that flee to the hills will have a special protection from Almighty God, and will be living to enter into the Kingdom of Righteousness, which will be established by Christ Himself. Let us now study with some detail this counterfeit kingdom of Satan, and his ultimate aim, during the tribulation. Satan's one big aim above everything else, is to destroy the lineage of the Messianic Hope.

THE FIFTH SEAL

This fifth seal will be opened with the following results against God's tribulation saints. "And when He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the Word of God, and the testimony which they held. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled." Rev.6:9-11. These are "tribulation saints" and not the saints of the body of Christ. They are the ones who will come out of the great tribulation. John on the Isle of Patmos saw these in preview and was puzzled as to who they were. (Rev.7:13.) "And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they who came out of the great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb." Rev.7:14. These are not members of the body of Christ, but are "Tribulation Saints". This is but another reason for us as students of God's Word to "Rightly Divide The Word of Truth". (2 Tim.2:15.) God expects us as believers to faithfully, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, to search the Scriptures. We need not be in the fog as to what the future holds, if we know the One who holds the future. God will reveal Himself to us through the Bible, being taught by the Holy Spirit. When all of this takes place, we will be safely in Paradise and clothed in our glorified bodies. As this sixth seal is opened, these earth dwellers will be faced with outer space activity, as God's wrath is poured out. This latter part of the tribulation is called, "The Abomination of Desolation" and Satan and all of his demons will make their last stand against Almighty God. There will be no other place for these wicked forces to make their stand against God. They will become desperate, knowing their time of final judgement is at hand. God in His sovereignty has allowed them to practice their free will, but they will also have to suffer the consequences. The evil forces' time is running out and praise God, it will come to an end! God has foretold us of the terrible things that are yet to come, but God is mindful of those who believe and will send His Eternal Son to deliver us from the wrath of God . (1 Thess.1:10.)

THE SIXTH SEAL

THERE WILL BE EARTHQUAKES AND OUTER SPACE DISTURBANCES

This earthquake will be known as "A Great Earthquake", which will be far greater than previous ones. The sun will become black and the appearance of the moon will be as blood. Stars will fall from heaven, upon the earth and there will be great destruction. Many of the mountains and the Islands will disappear. This will be God's great day of wrath and will be known by all. "For the Great Day of His wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand?" (Rev.6:12-17.) Some scientist predict that the sea will eventually rise many feet above its present level. We that will be so during the tribulation, when Islands will disappear. We do not know whether these islands will sink or the sea will rise, causing these Islands to disappear, but we know that the Islands will disappear with tremendous loss of life and property. The liberals and modernists take such statements from the Bible as just mystical sayings and merely another type of fable. Their statements do not alter God's judgements, but merely identify them as tools of Satan, deceiving their listeners. What God has said in the Bible will come to pass, exactly as the Holy Spirit has declared!

THE SEVENTH SEAL

With the opening of the seventh seal, the command will go forth to sound the seven trumpets and eventually the seven bowls containing the wrath of God. This will all take place during that "One World Government" under the power of Satan. The whole world will be under the condemnation of God as Satan continues his battle against the righteousness of God. Temporarily God will even stop the winds and breeze from blowing. (Rev.7:1.) There will also be a silence in heaven for about one half hour. (Rev.8:1.) All of this will be taking place in the first half of the tribulation, until the "Abomination of Desolation", when the fifth trumpet will sound. (Rev.9:1-11.) As we look at the results of the first four trumpets, may we realize that all of this happens within the space of three and one half years. No wonder the people will try to flee from this wrath to come and even cry out to the stones to crush them. All of this is not some sort of fantasy, but a reality and will be literally fulfilled. As the scroll is opened, God will pour out His wrath upon this wicked world. These are all the prelude to the final battle that will take place called the battle of Armageddon. Instead of the unregenerate repenting and crying out to God for forgiveness they gnash their teeth and curse God. As the tribulation continues during the first three and one half years, there will be great preparations by Satan to deceive the people in thinking that they can defeat God.

THE FIRST TRUMPET WILL SOUND

HAIL AND FIRE MINGLED WITH BLOOD

The results that will follow will be extensive forest fires with one third of all the trees in the whole world being burned, and all the grass will be completely destroyed by fire. This will be mingled with blood, so the stench from these conditions will be terrible, effecting the

surviving life upon the earth. Let the environmentalist try to solve such a situation. (Rev.8:7.) Praise God, we who are of the body of Christ will be caught up, out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) It is actually a wonder that any life remains upon the earth during these individual predictions of great devastation, as proclaimed by God. That is why the Lord hath said, "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Matt.24:21-22.

THE SECOND TRUMPET WILL SOUND

A GREAT MOUNTAIN WILL BE SUBMERGED INTO THE SEA

The results of that great mountain, being cast into the sea, will cause billions of deaths and a third part of the seas will turn to blood, due to these deaths. A third part of the creatures of the sea die. This will cause a problem with the sea going vessels and one third of the ships will sink and be destroyed. (Rev.8:8-9.) Each of these judgements of God become worse and worse as God pours out His wrath upon the kingdom of Satan.

THE THIRD TRUMPET WILL SOUND

A GREAT STAR FROM THE HEAVENS WILL FALL UPON THE EARTH

This will be a burning meteor, of great size and very bitter, contaminating one third of all the rivers and streams. (Rev.8:10-11.) The drinking water will become bitter and cause many to die. These are terrible days for those who will be left, when the Lord comes for His own. (Jn.14:1-6; 1 Thess.4:13-18.) Make no mistake about this, for God's Word clearly sets forth these literal catastrophes. With bitter waters everywhere, there will be a great rush to the food shops for sodas and all sorts of bottled drinks.

THE FOURTH TRUMPET WILL SOUND

THE SUN, THE MOON, AND THE STARS WILL BE STRUCK

There will evidently be some collisions in the heavens as these great planets crash into each other. God will be demonstrating an outstanding array of fireworks beyond our imagination. The sun light upon the earth will be effected and there will be much darkness. The sun will lose much of its brightness and the reflection upon the moon will diminish. One third of all the stars will be affected by this, bringing much darkness to the earth. (Rev.8:12.) This will be the concluding wrath of God for the first three and one half years of the tribulation. Three woes are now uttered by an angel, pronouncing the next three trumpets by three woes. (Rev.8:13.)

THE FIFTH TRUMPET WILL SOUND

THE HEAVENLY BATTLE WILL TAKE PLACE

Satan has been controlling the Beasts under remote control, and from here on through his terrible kingdom there will be the greatest tribulation ever to take place. It will be "The Abomination of Desolation", aimed directly against Israel and the tribulation saints. The fifth trumpet will sound and two great lines of battle will be formed. Michael and his angels and Satan and his fallen angels called demons. For details of this, read carefully Revelation chapter 12:7-17. This will clear heaven of all evil forces, which will be cast down to earth as predicted in Isaiah chapter 14 and verse twelve. The details of this are recorded in Revelation 9:1-11; with the first of the three woes being completed.

Satan and his demons will be forever barred from heaven, and will make their last stand against God upon planet earth. All these evil forces will be gathered upon the earth to make war against God and the tribulation saints. These last three and one half years of the tribulation will be like hell upon the earth among all nations. Satan's forces of demons will be joined by all those who are not saved. The demons now in the bottomless pit and those under the Euphrates river, when released, will join forces with Satan. (Rev.9:1-21.) It will represent the sum total of wickedness concentrated on planet earth in defiance of the God of all creation. God has chosen the earth, both to pay the total cost of sin and to destroy sin and death forever. Satan will take over all the evil forces, declaring himself as their god and ruler of this earth.

Those demons from the bottomless pit will be freed by Satan, who will be given the key to open it. This great army of demons, led by the five star general called "Destroyer", will torment the unregenerate for 5 months. "And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them." Rev.9:6. We cannot imagine so great a torment from these demons, with this destroyer king over them. This great army has been shut up in the bottomless pit since the time of rebellion by Lucifer. This king of a great army of demons is as a five star general, and he will go forth with great power, when released by Satan. This concludes the first of the three woes cried out by the angel of God.

THE SIXTH TRUMPET WILL SOUND

FOUR DEMON GENERALS LOOSED FROM THE EUPHRATES

When the second woe is proclaimed and the sixth trumpet sounds, there will be four fallen angels loosed from under the Euphrates river. They will go forth with a tremendous army of two hundred million strong. Over a billion men shall be slain over a period of 1 year, 1 month, 1 day, and 1 hour. The methods of destroying were by fire which burned, by smoke which suffocated, and by brimstone which scorched. These will come forth from the eastern border of the Roman Empire. We have another reference to activity around the Euphrates river in Rev. 16:12-15; which we will deal with later. During the time allotted to these four demons, they will destroy one third of all the people upon the earth. That is why the time of daylight had to be shortened by God as Christ declared. "And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved, but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." Matt.24:22. We have

already dealt with the lack of sunlight in Revelation 8:12. The question can be asked, "Will the Euphrates dry up at this point to allow the armies of the East to move across in preparations for the battle of Armageddon?" Those who will be left from this slaughter we are told, "And the rest of the men who were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, and silver, and bronze, and stone, and wood, which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk. Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts." Rev.9:20-21. Those of the tribulation will have these armies of fallen angels bringing violence for one year, one month, one day and one hour, and will slay the third part of all the men. (Rev.9:15.) There will be two hundred million of these wicked spirits engulfing the whole world. Rev.9:16. God in His sovereignty will allow these demons to go so far and no further.

JERUSALEM SHALL BE HIT WITH A GREAT EARTHQUAKE

Before the final trumpet is sounded, a mighty angel comes down from heaven with a scroll or we could say a "Title Deed", as he places his right foot upon the sea and his left foot upon the earth. There will then be heard seven thunders uttering a secret message which John was not permitted to write. The mighty angel declared all the heavens and earth were created by the living God. God is proclaimed the rightful owner of all creation as the angel lifted up his hand to heaven. (Rev.10:5-6.) From here on the completion of the prophecy given to the prophets will be accomplished. (Rev.10:7.) That scroll was given to John to eat and it was sweet to eat but bitter when swallowed. (Rev.10:8-11.) This message was then given to John. "And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again about many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings." Rev.10:11.

John was then to measure the temple of God, which assures us of the reality of these end days. Jerusalem will be trodden down by the Gentiles under the power of Satan for 42 months, which will be the last part of the Tribulation which is called the "Abomination of Desolation". During these last three and one half years, Satan will be directly in charge of the battle against God. It will seem as though Satan is winning out as the tribulation saints are slain, and Jerusalem is being destroyed and seven thousand men were killed. (Rev.11:13.)

GOD'S SPECIAL WITNESSES

As God had promised the Old Testament saints that Elijah would come back and herald the coming "Kingdom of Righteousness", so during the Great Tribulation Elijah will be sent as promised. "Behold, I will send you Elijah, the prophet, before the coming of the great and terrible day of the Lord; And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse." Mal.4:5-6. Elijah will be accompanied by Moses, for a testimony and witness to the remnant in that day. These two will have great power during those last 42 months and will finally be killed, but raised again after laying in the street for three days and one half, and called back to heaven. Read carefully Revelation 11:3-14. This will be the time when a great earthquake hits Jerusalem, destroying one tenth of it, and killing seven thousand men. The Middle East is being prepared for a terrible onslaught, but God is sovereign, and will bring it to pass. This will be an amazing sight for all,

with the remnant giving glory to the God of heaven. Thus the second woe will be completed, as God's sixth angel fulfil's God's command. Let us now consider the seventh angel as preparations are made to sound the seventh trumpet. As the final trumpet sounds, so we become aware of further judgements of God.

THE SEVENTH TRUMPET WILL SOUND

THE REIGN OF CHRIST PROMISED

As John was given an insight to the things to come, God the Holy Spirit presents an intermission with great anticipation, "The kingdom of this world is become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever." Rev.11:15b. The heavens will rejoice when the Lord regains control of the earth, and note what the 24 elders say. "And the four and twenty elders, who sat before God on their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned." Rev.11:16-17.

Mankind will have the final test, as to his acceptance or rejection of God's provision through His Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. This promise of the reign of Christ, will be fulfilled according to God's fullness of time. The conditions will be perfect, with nature restored, Satan and his demons controlled, and a kingdom of righteousness installed. There will be no excuse for the earthly people, except themselves. We will have a glorious time teaching God's Word.

THE FINAL JUDGEMENTS TO COME

This of course will cause the wicked nations under the power of Satan to be angry. "And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants, the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them who destroy the earth." Rev.11:18. This portion of Scripture includes both **"The Judgement seat of Christ"** (2 Cor. 5:10.) and **"The Great White Throne Judgement"**. (Rev.20:11-15.) The Judgement seat of Christ will take place in heaven after the Rapture of the saints and they shall receive their rewards according to their faithfulness. (1 Cor.3:12-17.) The great temple in heaven will be opened, reaffirming the unconditional covenants of God with a great display of lightening and thunder, earthquakes and hail, with voices of praise. (Rev.11:19.)

C. TO DESTROY THE MESSIANIC HOPE

Down through the ages, God has foiled the determination of Satan to destroy the seed of the woman that would bruise his head. (Gen.3:15.) He has failed to interfere with God's plans, regardless of how hard he tried. God in His Omniscience is aware of everything, and nothing is hidden from Him. Nevertheless, Satan keeps on trying, as we are reminded in these next events that as in the past, Satan tried to destroy the Messiah, so he will avenge the chosen race

of people during the latter part of the tribulation. "And there appeared a great wonder in heaven - a woman (Israel) clothed with the sun (Jacob), and the moon (Jacob's wife) under her feet, and upon her head a crown of 12 stars (The twelve tribes of Israel). And she being with child (Messiah), cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered." Rev.12:1-2.

SATAN'S TARGET FOR DESTRUCTION

The third woe covers the presence of the Devil on earth, being cast out of heaven, and "his target will be Israel, the chosen race of God. Satan has been the arch enemy against Israel because of the Messianic lineage through the tribe of Judah. Although Satan has failed to stop the entrance of the Messiah into this world, he has continued to attempt a destruction of the heritage of the Messiah. He is still at large and with his billions of demons as his private army, he is still a potential threat against God and His plans. Added to these demons, Satan will have the Revival of the Roman Empire at his command. (Rev.12:3-4.) Satan tried to devour the Christ child in the past and with his great command, he will continue to threaten the Christ as He is destined to rule the nations with a rod of Iron. (Ps.2:8-9; Rev.2:27; Rev.12:5; Rev.19:15.) Unless you understand how to rightly divide God's Word, you will have great difficulties in understanding this continual attack by Satan upon the Messianic hope. As Satan will take over the "One World Government" under the cloak of the Revived Roman Empire, he and his demons being thrown out of heaven, he will during the last three and one half years of the tribulation attack the remnant of true Israel. That is why the Lord Jesus Christ sets forth a warning for those destined to go through the tribulation. "When ye, therefore, shall see the "Abomination of Desolation", spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place (whosoever readeth, let him understand), Then let them who are in Judea flee into the mountains;" Matt.24:15-16. Now couple this with, "And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days." Rev.12:6. This number is the same as 42 months or three and one half years. It is repeated again with more detail. "And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times and half a time, from the face of the serpent." Rev.12:14. This will take place during the latter half of the tribulation. Israel will have a 7 year covenant with the Dictator of the Revived Roman Empire, which will be broken during the second half of the tribulation. (Dan.9:27.)

The Beast of this Revived Roman Empire will not need the covenant with Israel because Satan and his demons are now his co-partners, they having been thrown out of heaven by Michael the arch angel.(Rev.12:7-10.) "Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the Devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time." Rev.12:12b. Since Satan, that dragon cannot persecute the Christ Child, he will turn his wrath upon Israel. "And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman who brought forth the male child." Rev.12:13. Satan will try carrying away the remnant of Israel with a flood, but God will cause the earth to open and absorb the waters. This will cause Satan to be very angry and he will now turn upon the 144,000 plus others who will keep the commandments of God and a testimony to the saving grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, (Rev.12:17.)

THE TWO BEASTS OF DECEPTION

This Beast that comes up from the sea, indicates to us that he will be an international Dictator reviving the Roman Empire. He will be "The Little Horn" of the Book of Daniel. (Dan. 7:8, 24-25.) Satan will use both of these Beasts mentioned in Revelation 13:1-18. The second Beast is compared as the anti-christ as he will come from the earth, which refers to "The Promised Land of Israel.

The first will receive a deadly wound by the sword but will be healed. The earthly people will recognize that Satan will provide the beast with great power and they will worship the dragon. (Rev.13:1-6.) The Beast will make war with the tribulation saints, and power will be given the Beast over all nations. (Rev.13:7.) All the unregenerate will worship the Beast. (Rev.13:8.)

The second Beast will look like a lamb, but speak like a dragon. (Rev.13:11.) Satan will use this second Beast to convince the remaining children of Israel allowing them to continue with their temple worship during the first part of the tribulation, showing them great wonders with fire from heaven, deceiving many through these miracles. (Rev.13:13-14.) He will cause the people whom he has deceived to make an image of the first Beast and to worship him. Those that refuse will be killed. All worshippers of the Beast will receive the mark 666 upon their right hand or forehead. Without this mark, no man can buy nor sell their products. (Rev.13:15-18.

May we take note of these terrible Beasts and their great power. This power that they will have will come forth from Satan himself. The demon released from the bottomless pit will be the indwelling power of the International Dictator, spoken of in Revelation 13. We draw this conclusion from Revelation 17:8. "The Beast that thou sawest was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the Beast that was, and is not, and yet is." What the Holy Spirit is reminding us with this passage is the combination of the earthly and spiritual realms. The demon of the bottomless pit, is , and the Beast who was not at the writing of this prophecy, will be in the fullness of time. Nothing in the sight of God gets out of control, but in due time, God's sovereignty will be revealed. All of this gives us a greater understanding of Satan's kingdom upon this earth that will be during the tribulation. Satan will use every available situation to use his demons to secure his kingdom. But God who knows all things is always mindful of every move that Satan and his armies of demons will make.

THE 144,000 YOUTH OF THE TRIBULATION

This should give great comfort to those of the 144,000 who will go through the tribulation. It will encourage them to continue as witnesses for the Lord, during those terrible days. They will be partakers of the first resurrection, which is in stages. Christ being the first fruits, then the Rapture, which shall include the Old Testament saints as well as the saints of the mystery age, known as "The Body of Christ", and the 144,000 plus others shall be raised from the grave, being slain during the tribulation. "And I looked and, lo, a Lamb stood on Mount Zion, and with Him an hundred forty and four thousand, having His Father's name written in their foreheads." Rev.14:1. The heavens break forth with the sound of music, played upon harps, as

the 144,000 sang. (Rev.14:3-5.) These will become tribulation martyrs for a testimony and witness to the saving grace of our loving Lord.

THE ANGEL WITH THE EVERLASTING GOSPEL

The scene changes again and we are carried back in thought to the great tribulation, with the everlasting Gospel being broadcast by an angel of God, from the skies. Perhaps God is through this method, making sure that all will hear and are without excuse. "And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to Him; for the hour of His judgement is come; and worship Him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters." Rev.14:6-7. This will be pure grace from Almighty God, sending out the final warning to all the people who will be passing through the tribulation. All will be without excuse before God. God continually shows forth His marvelous grace.

THE SECOND ANGEL PROCLAIMS MYSTERY BABYLON WILL FALL

The seat of "The Revived Roman Empire" will be Rome, where the ecumenical religions will combine their religious efforts, as they will help put the Beast into power. "So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet-colored Beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and bedecked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of he fornication; And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great wonder." Rev.17:3-6. This angel merely announces that the religions of the world will face their final judgement. The seat of these religions will be in Rome as we will discover in further study of this proclamation by God's angel. The ecumenical crowd are at present working on a one world church at all cost and without the Bible.

THE THIRD ANGEL PRONOUNCES DOOM TO COME

This third angel will go forth upon the whole face of the earth and warn all people not to take the mark of the Beast, for it will bring upon them everlasting torment, with no rest for the victims, day or night. "The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of His indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb." Rev.14:10. The holy angels of God will be there at the Great White Throne Judgement as the Lamb pronounces their sentence, and all that are guilty will be cast into the Lake of fire, and remain there forever and ever. This of course gives us an added insight into the final judgement which will take place after the thousand year reign of righteousness. This is but another illustration of the necessity of knowing the plan of God for all ages as set forth in the Bible.

THE BLESSED RESURRECTION TO COME

Because the Lord lives, we shall also live with a resurrected and glorified body. Christ said, "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this?" Jn.11:25-26. Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord. "And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from henceforth. Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors, and their works do follow them." Rev.14:13. Your labor in the Lord is not in vain, when one seeks the Lord's will. Those who have died and are dying in the Lord have a blessed hope and will have a part in the first resurrection. "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." Rev.20:6. Looking down the corridors of time, we have an eternal glory to share with the Lord as saints of all ages, and especially we who are members of the body of Christ.

THAT COMING BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON

Here is a preview of that coming battle of Armageddon, which is given to us in Revelation 19:17-21. Christ the King of kings and Lord of lords is seen both with crown and sickle. The command to reap will come forth from the heavenly temple which has been opened. There will be three angels helping in the reaping a harvest of souls which have rejected the Lord. The wrath of God will be poured out upon them. God knows exactly when these armies led by Satan will challenge Christ's authority. The blood shed will be terrible as God pours out His wrath upon the armies in the valley of Magiddon. "And the winepress was trodden outside the city (Jerusalem), and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs." Rev.14:20. That great valley of Esdreliion, the valley of Magiddon will be the greatest battlefield of all time. Napoleon spoke of it be so vast that one could put all the armies in the world into it and there would still be room. Well, the armies of the world will be gathered there in anticipation of the coming of the Lord. Although the great Angelic armies will come with the Lord as He rides that mighty white horse. We along with the great armies of angels will be but observers as Christ declares their destruction. There will be no need of the armies of angels to fight to bring victory to God, for Christ shall merely have to speak and the millions will be destroyed. God's Word is alive and powerful, and Christ is the expression of that powerful Word. You and I as believers have taken advantage of God's powerful Word, bring salvation to all who believe. If you desire to go from strength to strength, then get into God's Word and be established in "Thus Saith the Lord"! Now let us see what the Bible says about the seven last plagues that will hit this world during the great tribulation. God has completely revealed these plans to us through the Bible. All of this acts as a warning to the unsaved, and they can rest assured that the arms of the Lord are open, with great love, for all to come unto Him.

THE POURING OUT OF THE WRATH OF GOD

REVELATION 15 AND 16

THE SEVEN LAST PLAGUES

The count down for the pouring out of these seven last plagues will start after the judgements of the seventh trumpet have been completed and other events foretold. Since the Rapture will take place prior to all these judgements, the saints will be there "As it were, a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God." Rev.15:2.

THE SONG OF MOSES WILL BE SUNG

The song of Moses links them with the Mosaic law, but added to that is "The Song of the Lamb". The saints of all ages are dependent upon "The Lamb of God, that taketh away the sins of the world" (Jn.1:29.) Christ is the king over all the saints. (Rev.15:3b.) All nations shall come to Jerusalem and worship the Lord during the Kingdom of righteousness. "Every knee shall bow before the Lord." (Phil.2:9-11.) We who are believers have bowed our knees before the Lord Jesus Christ. There are billions of ungodly who have refused to bow before the Lord, but when raised from the dead and stand before the Great White Throne, they will fall upon their faces, bowing their knees to the King of kings and Lord of lords.

THE HEAVENLY TEMPLE WILL OPEN

As a preview, John saw on the Isle of Patmos, the temple opening in heaven and seven angels came forth for the final last seven plagues during the tribulation. (Rev.15:5-6.) One of the four living creatures (Cherub), gave the seven angels the seven golden bowls of the wrath of God, to be poured out upon the people of the earth. (Rev.15:7.) The heavenly temple will be filled with a cloud of smoke, forbidding all from entering into the temple until the final plague is completed. (Rev.15:8.)

THE POURING OUT OF THE WRATH OF GOD

The pouring out of the bowls of God's wrath upon the earth, as we will see, indicate God's anger upon the dwellers upon earth, for rejecting His Eternal Son, and following Satan who has usurped the earth and made it into a kingdom of darkness and sin. Briefly we will relate what is to come upon this earth before the battle of Armageddon, and the setting up of the kingdom of righteousness. The setting of time is toward the end of the "Abomination of Desolation". Those that will follow Satan in his "One World Government" will suffer severely. Those with the name of God written upon their foreheads will be immune, as a terrific witness for God.

THE FIRST BOWL OF THE WRATH OF GOD

As the first angel pours out the bowl of wrath upon those with the mark of the beast, and those that worship his image, received terrible sores. "And the first went, and poured out his bowl upon the earth, and there fell a foul and painful sore upon the men who had the mark of the beast, and upon them who worshiped his image." Rev.16:2.

THE SECOND BOWL OF THE WRATH OF GOD

The environmentalist of the tribulation will have their hands full when the sea becomes in the likeness of the blood of a dead man. All living creatures, the fish and the plants will die. The sea going vessels will be at a stand still during this terrible wrath from Almighty God. "And the second angel poured out his bowl upon the sea, and it became like the blood of a dead man; and every living soul died in the sea." Rev.16:3,

THE THIRD BOWL OF THE WRATH OF GOD.

It was terrible enough to have the stench come from the sea, and now the rivers and fountains of water will become blood, making it impossible for using this source of water for any purpose. These will be terrible punishments upon the people of the earth, but God has a reason for pouring out such wrath. Here is what the angel says, "Thou art righteous O Lord, who art, and wast, and shall be, because thou hast judged thus. For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy." Rev.16:5b-6. The satanic power given to the Beast is being challenged by God, showing His sovereignty.

THE FOURTH BOWL OF THE WRATH OF GOD

Then the heat from outer space will be turned toward the earth scorching the unregenerate, who will blaspheme the name of God, rather than repent of their deeds. Scientists of today claim that the heat of the sun is penetrating deeper to the north with tropical weather. If that is true, it is but another indication that God in His great power, will pour out His wrath during the tribulation. There will be no repentance among the inflicted, nor will they glorify God. "And the fourth angel poured out his bowl upon the sun, and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire." Rev.16:8. Will God add to the fire of the sun, or move it closer to this earth during this time? That is God's secret. Whatever method God uses, we have the information of the result upon planet earth. There will be no escape from this scorching heat, there will be very little activity in the open. The air conditioners if they will work, will be in operation with their full capacity.

THE FIFTH BOWL OF THE WRATH OF GOD

When the fifth angel pours out his bowl of wrath, it will be a direct hit upon the throne of the Beast. There will be a penetrating darkness that no amount of electricity will be able to cope

with it. I have never experienced any darkness that produces pain, but we are told, "And the fifth angel poured out his bowl upon the throne of the beast, and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain." Rev.16:10. They will blaspheme the name of God because of the sores from the first bowl of wrath until the dense darkness that has engulfed the Beast's kingdom. (Rev.16:11.)

This will effect the water supply for all of the far east, and will cause the armies of the East to move toward the Middle East in preparation for that great battle, when the Lord returns to claim His kingdom. Please note that when the sixth trumpet will be sounded, four great demons with their armies will come forth from the river Euphrates. They will kill one third of all of the people upon this earth over a period of one year, one month, one day and one hour. (Rev.9:13-21.) Here again the river Euphrates is used by God in the pouring out of His wrath. "And the sixth angel poured out his bowl upon the great river Euphrates, and its water was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared." Rev.16:12.

PREVIEW OF ARMAGEDDON

Before the final bowl of the wrath of God, John was given to visualize the coming battle of Armageddon. The rulers of this coming "One World Government" are identified as "spirits of demons" (Rev.16:14a.) The miracles which the rulers of the nations will see are directly through these demons. It will be the satanic power that will cause the nations to challenge the coming of the Lord as recorded in Revelation 19:11-21. This will be a sign or warning to the tribulation saints to be ready for the coming of the Lord for battle and also to set up His kingdom of righteousness. I remind you that the Rapture will have taken place prior to the opening of the seals, as recorded in Revelation chapter 5 and 6. I also remind you that many tribulation saints will flee to the hills for a special protection by God. (Matt.24:15-16; Rev.12:6.) "Behold I come as a thief, Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest walk naked, and they see his shame. And He gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon." Rev.16:15-16. This is but a reminder and preview of this coming battle of Armageddon, as God in His sovereignty will gather the nations under Satan to make their hopeless stand against our Eternal God. The death toll will be terrible, but is only a portion of what the ungodly along with the demons will face throughout eternity to come. There will be no escape route from that lake of fire, where the unregenerate and all the demons will experience a living death with God's continual wrath be poured out upon them, throughout eternity to come. It is of the utmost importance that we take heed to what the Bible says, establishing our faith in our Almighty God who loves us with an everlasting love.

THE SEVENTH BOWL OF THE WRATH OF GOD

As the seventh angel pours out his bowl of wrath, then the smoke within the heavenly temple will be remove and a great voice will cry, "IT IS DONE". This will spark off the greatest fireworks of all ages, with tremendous thunder, lightening and earthquakes. That great holy city of Jerusalem will witness a great earthquake dividing the city into three parts as important cities around the world fall. Mystery Babylon will be in for her share of God's wrath.

Another important event will be the disappearing of all of the islands, throughout the whole world. The great mountains will also disappear into the water, and this will swell the waters of the seas, engulfing all of the islands. The scientist report that according to the rising seas of today, that in the year two thousand the water of the seas will rise 45 feet. Be that as it may, we have God's record that the islands and the mountains will disappear. (Rev.16:20.) This judgement is terrible enough, but we are told , "And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent; and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, for the plague was exceedingly great." Rev.16:21. These hail stones will be at least 60 lbs each. Can you imagine the damage that these hail stones will do to all properties, especially those buildings with glass enclosure! Those who will be out in such a storm will most likely be killed or badly wounded.

THE FINAL BLOW AGAINST MYSTERY BABYLON

How anything will survive the seventh bowl of God's wrath is a mystery in itself. But let us read on in the Bible, concerning the "Mystery Babylon". God's final stroke against "The Apostate Ecumenical Religions of the World." In our present day the religions of the world are being gathered together, regardless of beliefs for the sole purpose of a united effort of a "One World Church Order". They are combining their resources into a great wealth and powerful persuasion. Rightfully so, these combine religions are called , "The Great Harlot", and as a preview of this, the seventh angel showed John this harlot riding the Beast into power. This combination of all religions, will head up in Rome and will be in a great position to place the Beast into this "One World Government" which will be under Satan. After all of those plagues, destruction and deaths, you would think that the survivors would turn to God in repentance, but they do not! These remaining unregenerate join together with the Beasts, Satan, and the demons in a trinity of darkness, combining all the evil forces, and will try to prevent the Lord Jesus Christ from coming to earth for His thousand year, "kingdom of Righteousness". We have God's Word, knowing that they will fail and fall under the sword of the Eternal Son of God.

These are terrible things to come, with pollution, disease, death and devastation to the utmost. In the Bible, we have recorded the warning of these terrible events to come. The Lord in His omniscience reminds us, "For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened." Matt.24:21-22. There will still be 24 hours in a day, but daylight will be shortened, to save the elect from perishing. Therefore it is important that we as God's witnesses continue to proclaim the escape route through the Lord Jesus Christ. "How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation, which at first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard Him. God also bearing them witness both with signs and wonders, and with diverse miracles and gifts of the Holy Spirit, according to His own will." Heb.2:3-4.

God has, through the Bible, revealed to us as to what is literally going to happen under the kingdom of Satan upon this Planet earth. We have the escape route, through the Rapture, bringing all saints into God the Father's mansions. After the great tribulation, we will come with the Lord as He sets up His kingdom of Righteousness, upon this earth. Christ's reign upon this present earth will be the final test for the people of the earth, and they will have to choose God's

righteousness or Satan's condemnation. We as Believers will be a kingdom of priests during that period. The people of this world who will enter this kingdom and those born during the thousand year reign, will have to choose between light and goodness or darkness and evil.

The question now that confronts us is, What is going to happen to this ecumenical religious group that casts their vote together to accept this "One World Government". They will be promised by the Beast a "One World Church". "And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and bedecked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication; And upon her forehead was a name written, **MYSTERY BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**. And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great wonder." Rev.17:4-6.

The explanation of this is given in the following verses. This involves the Beast, the Revival of the Roman Empire and the Woman who sits among the seven hills of Rome. When you read, "was and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit", it gives us a combination of the Beast that will be and the demon that is at present in the bottomless pit. This demon will dwell eventually in the Beast, giving him great power. (Rev.17:7-13.) We have an earlier reference to this. "And when they shall have finish their testimony, (referring to Moses and Elijah) the Beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them." Rev.11:7. What we need to understand with the Beast, religion and the demons is their need for each other. The Beast, in his earlier days will be in need of the combined religions of the world to ride him into power. But in the middle of the Tribulation, when Satan is thrown out of heaven, the Beast will have tremendous added power through the demonic world, and will not have need of the world of religions. The wealth of these religions will be taken and their form of worship destroyed.

There is also a play on numbers as "And there are seven kings (Seven empires that dominated Israel) five are fallen (five empires of the past), and one is (The Roman Empire) and the other is not yet come; (the revival of the Roman Empire) and when he cometh(The Beast Dictator), he must continue a short space. "And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the Abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred and ninety days." Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days." Dan.12:11-12. The difference of days recorded here of 45 days considers the time that it will take to cleanse the temple, and removing the image of the Beast, and all other filth of idolatry.

The Beast is considered the eighth ruler of the Roman Empire, as he will be the revival of the seventh. "and the Beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. (Into the lake of fire) Rev.19:20.) The following two verses help explain the ten horns of Daniel, which refer to the nations that will share in the power of the Beast of the Revived Roman Empire. "And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, who have received no kingdom yet (for the tribulation is yet future), but receive power as kings one hour with the Beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the Beast." Rev.17:12-13. When Satan and his demons are cast out of heaven, they will rally round the blasphemous beast and cause all the rulers of the world to cooperate with the Beast, making a "One World Government", which will be under Satan. This is Satan's counterfeit as to what

God's reality will be when the Lord comes to rule and reign in righteousness for the thousand years upon this earth. Although things are in a terrible condition today, and men are desiring peace at all cost, they will be willing to pay the price, with a guarantee of peace. This will trigger off "The Abomination of Desolation" with the most terrible conditions that this world has ever known. Satan has and will continue to use "spiritual wickedness in high places" (Eph.6:12.) and deceive the unregenerate through religion, which will come to an end as declared in the Word of God.

As the world politics uses various groups of religious beliefs, as well as immoral practices to gain their votes, so the Beast under the power of Satan will use organized religion to gain control. All that is necessary is a verbal promise or even in writing, to gain an ultimate end. Once endued with power, it will not be difficult to scrap the agreement, and destroy all opposition. This is nothing new in the history of human governments. As we read, religion will come to it's end and receive it's judgement.

FALSE RELIGIONS WILL BE JUDGED

AND

MYSTERY BABYLON WILL BE DESTROYED

God will allow the Beast to destroy these religions, giving the victory unto the Lamb. "These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them; for He is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with Him are called, the chosen, and faithful." Rev.17:14. This is also a preview of the Battle of Armageddon as we will study in Revelation chapter 19.

John now will have added information concerning "Mystery Babylon" and the Beast of the Revived Roman Empire. During the second half of the tribulation, when Satan takes over "The One World Government", then a hatred against the ecumenical religions will take place. When the sum total of this hatred is fulfilled, then the harlot and her domain will be destroyed. The Beast will then be in charge of all the religions of the world, causing them to worship his image. An angel from heaven will proclaim this destruction. (Rev.18:1-3.)

There will also be another angel that will cry to those saints left on earth, "Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues;" Rev.18:4. These false religions from around the world shall be judged, under the sovereignty of God. (Rev.18:8.) Sometimes the Lord permits punishments to be given indirectly, as in this case. The Beast will have no further need for the scarlet woman that led him into power, for the entire demonic world will be present under the command of Satan.

THE MERCHANTS OF THE WORLD WILL MOURN

Religious regalia has brought great profits to the merchants from around the world and their profits will be gone! The politicians and rulers will lament for her as they see the burning city. They will not get involved with the judgement against this ecumenical destruction, but "Standing afar off for fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, Babylon, that mighty city!

For in one hour is thy judgement come. And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more." Rev.18:10-11. Read carefully Revelation 18:12-19. Great will be the loss to the businesses of the world. No doubt the priests and rulers of these religions will be killed, as the followers of the Beast loot out the gold and silver and precious things before the destruction.

The whole commercial world will be affected by the destruction of all religions, especially those of the ecumenical movement. Today, Christians are being lulled to sleep with beautiful lectures, exalting the great accomplishments of civilized man. These liberals of today will be swallowed up with this hope of a "One World Church"!

THE ANGELIC HOSTS AND SAINTS REJOICE

The heavenly creatures are aware of more than we think, as they are watching the events of all ages. As Mystery Babylon will be destroyed, the angels and the saints in heaven will rejoice to see this destruction of harlotry within religion. "Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her." Rev.18:20. With great violence will that great city Babylon be thrown down. This can only refer to the "Scarlet Woman" who will lead the Beast into power and then be destroyed. (Rev.18:21.) The sound of music within her temples will cease, and the candles will not be lit again, nor her deception of the nations. She was guilty of the slaying of many prophets and saints down through the ages. (Rev.18:22-24.) Sometimes God waits a long time to retaliate for the wrong doings, but in God's own time, He brings it to pass.

With all of this study of the terrible days ahead, we are not pessimistic, but realistic as we study God's plans for all ages. This takes a lot of hard work as we look into the Bible and rightly divide it, into the rightful categories. Before we examine the coming of the Lord to destroy His enemies and set up the kingdom of righteousness, may we refresh ourselves with a study of God's protecting power over His own. We are made aware, according to the Scripture, that Satan is trying his best to bring confusion in the world with his deception. We are also aware that Satan wants to establish his domain upon planet earth, defying God and attempting to destroy God's promises of the future. May we search the Scripture affirming God's provisions and glorify the precious name of the Lord Jesus Christ. As you study God's Word, always review in your mind the characteristics of the Triune God. Perfect Love, Absolute Justice, Righteous, Holy, Veracity, Omniscient, Omnipresent, Omnipotent, Eternal life, Sovereign, immutable and impeccable. There is nothing nor no one that can be compared to our Almighty God. Satan cannot do one thing without the permissive will of God. It is amazing that he is attempting to defy God in so many ways, as he deceived the billions of angels and continually deceives mankind. Satan seems to ignore that this very earth that he has stolen from God, is upheld by God? Does he think that as he depends upon the religions of the world, that God will be mindful of his greedy desires?

The religions of the world under the ecumenical system will come to an end during the satanic reign upon this earth. The Beast will have no need for them as he is empowered by the evil forces during that terrible Abomination of Desolation. As the Angelic hosts of heaven and the saints of God in Paradise will rejoice when Satan and his demons are thrown out of heaven, so there will be great rejoicing in heaven when the harlot, called the scarlet woman is destroyed.

There is great activity in heaven and the heavens are alerted to these closing events before the Rapture. There is daily news of events upon the earth as the saints leave their earthly bodies and find their place in Paradise. The news of this earth is shared with those who have gone on before. There are great Bible classes in heaven with the angels and the saints comparing notes. It is very important that we spend much time, studying God's Word as we await that heavenly calling. "Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. 2 Tim.2:15.

As we conclude this study concerning Satan's aim and desires, don't think that you can fight the battle against evil forces without depending upon God. The Holy Spirit has been sent to comfort, guide, and teach us things in the spiritual realm. He has also been sent to protect us against the evil forces. He is our ever present help, and will be within us for eternity. Those glorified bodies which will be waiting for us will also be indwelt by the Holy Spirit. How do we know this? Note what the Lord said. "And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever; Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you." Jn.14:16-17. If God has promised us the Holy Spirit forever, that will make us partnership with our Lord Jesus Christ, by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit through out eternity. We are in dire need of Him as we journey through this present life. You and I as saints of God need a constant protection against the evil forces, during our life span. We cannot fight this battle alone, for we need each other to uplift in prayer, and God the Holy Spirit who dwells within us. "For our citizenship is in heaven, from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall change our lowly body, that it may be fashioned like His glorious body, according to the working by which He is able even to subdue all things unto Himself. Phil.3:20-21. Finally, brethren, whatever things are true, whatever things are honest, whatever things are just, whatever things are pure, whatever things are lovely, whatever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things." Phil.4:8.

God has been so gracious to reveal all of these things to come. May we continue to search the Scriptures, giving us assurance in this present life and confidence in God who holds the future. May we always remember that Christianity is not classified before God as a religion, but rather a relationship that God has established with us. We are of the Royal family of God. "For now we see in a mirror, darkly,; but then, face to face, now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known." 1 Cor.13:12. A glorious future awaits us as believers, and may we be found faithful to the Lord as we wait for that trumpet sound. May we depend upon God the Holy Spirit to guide us into all truth. May our lives be so yielded that we do not grieve the Holy Spirit, but keep on being filled by the Holy Spirit. These are terrible times that we are living in, and our lives need to the will of God. This battle against Satan and his demons is a reality and that is why we need to "Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.: Eph.6:11-12.

CONCLUSION

As we draw to a close this chapter in our study of this great conflict between Satan and our Eternal God, may we be aware of the evil tactics of the Devil, and all of his demons, as well as wicked human creatures. Satan that Devil often approaches the weak Christians as an angel of light, and he can approach in various ways. God in His sovereign power, has granted to both men and angels the freedom of choice through their thoughts, words and deeds. They may even have temporary benefits, but eternal condemnations. Satan will use whoever he can convince to "Do Their Own Thing". After he has persuaded them to choose wrongly, then he lets them wallow in their filth, having accomplished his aim.

God is aware of every move that Satan makes, and every thought and intent that he or all of his demons may have. God's final plans are secure and never need to be altered, for His is immutable and absolutely impeccable! God will allow Satan to establish this "One World Government" in this world system, allowing sin to run its course. There will be countless human beings, caught in this false utopia and also counterfeit to what Christ will set up during the Millennium. This satanic power is great, but always under the sovereignty of God. He and all of his demons are aware that they have everlasting life, but are in for a tremendous shock, when they are destined to an everlasting living death, under the eternal wrath of God, being cast into the lake of fire. This is not just a temporary judgement as when these demons and Satan will be cast into the bottomless pit, but will be an eternal and continual punishment with the full wrath of God upon them which will never end and with no escape route. The unsaved of all generations will also be cast into the Lake of Fire. Then to complete the wrath of God, "Death" and "Hell" will also be cast into this Lake of fire, where the worm dieth not! These are literal truths recorded in the Bible, and we better obey God's "Living Word". "And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of life was cast into the lake of fire." Rev.20:14-15. Make sure that you as a student of God's Word is not depending upon your good works or some special good deeds, but fully trusting in the finished work of the Lord Jesus Christ. That is the only way that your name will not be blotted out of the Book of life.

Satan is very active with his billions of demons and as we get closer to the final battle, under his command, there will be other armies of demons added to this great number. However, we know that God already has the victory and is merely waiting for the fullness of time to separate forever the evil forces from the righteousness of God. Satan has tried many methods to defeat the eternal plan of God, but to no avail! May I conclude this chapter with the following. "Ye therefore, beloved, seeing that ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness. But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. To Him be glory both now and forever. Amen." 2 Pet.3:17-18. It is of a great importance that we remain steadfast in the things of God. That is why these things are written. They are not for you and me to have knowledge and appear intelligent, but rather that we might be established in the faith. "For whatever is born of God overcometh the world; and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith." 1 Jn.5:4.

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER THREE

- 1. What is the aim of Satan against God?**
- 2. Give some failures of Satan in the past with Scripture references.**
- 3. Why do you think that Satan rejoiced at the death of Abel?**
- 4. Why was the flood necessary?**
- 5. What was the importance of the lineage of Shem?**
- 6. Explain Genesis 49:16-17 and Judges 18:30a.**
- 7. Why was Esau rejected by God, even before he was born?**
- 8. Write an essay linking the following Scriptures. Genesis 3:15; Isa.7:14; and Galatians 4:4-5.**
- 9. Write briefly on Jeremiah 31:15; and Matthew 2:1-18.**
- 10. Why was John the Baptist a substitute for Elijah in heralding the kingdom? Malachi 4:5; contrast with Malachi 3:1-6 and explain Revelation 11:3-13.**
- 11. Explain Psalm 22:7-16. Why was the trial of Christ and crucifixion illegal?**
- 12. What do the following Scriptures teach us? Job.1:6-12; Revelation 12:10; and 1 John 1:1-2.**
- 13. Write briefly on "Establishing A One World Government By Satan".**
- 14. When will the Beast of the Revived Roman Empire receive his greatest power? Scripture please.**
- 15. Give brief statements explaining each of the four horses in Revelation 6:1-8.**
- 16. Who will be the evangelists during the Great Tribulation?**
- 17. Give brief explanations of the Seven Trumpets. Which one occurs in heaven?**
- 18. When does "The Abomination of Desolation" take place?
How long will this desolation last?**

- 19. What is the difference between the two beasts of Revelation 13:1-18?**
Explain the difference between the first beast coming up out of the sea, and the one coming up out of the earth.
- 20. What is Satan's target of destruction during the great tribulation?**
What does God provide for the Tribulation Saints as they flee to the mountains?
Revelation 12:1-4; Revelation 13:1-7; Matthew 24:15-16.
- 21. What is the difference in the two beasts of Revelation 13:1-18?**
- 22. Explain briefly each of the seven last plagues from the bowls of the wrath of God.**
Rev.15:1-21.
- 23. What is the "Mystery Babylon" and the "Scarlet Woman"?**
Revelation 17:1-18; and Revelation 18:1-24?

CHAPTER FOUR



GOD'S PROTECTING POWER

CHAPTER FOUR

GOD'S PROTECTING POWER

- A. THE MESSIANIC PROMISE**
- B. THE MESSIANIC PROVISION**
- C. THE MESSIANIC RESULTS**

INTRODUCTION

Regardless of what Satan attempts to do, every thought and intent that he might have, God in His omniscience knows exactly what Satan's intentions are, even before Satan himself plans his wicked deeds. We have seen the terrible destruction that is going to come upon this earth during the Tribulation and the conditions that this "One World Government Under Satan" will face. During this study, I want to venture back in the provisions and protection that God has made for His people of all generations, as to His promises. "But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slack concerning His promises, as some men count slackness, but is long-suffering toward us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are in it, shall be burned up." 2 Pet.3:8-10. There is nothing or no one that can thwart God in any way, or change His plans of deliverance for them who will trust in His promises. Let us look at three phases of God's promises and protecting power. This old world of ours is like a time bomb, and in God's fullness of time, the white hot core of this world will burst forth and destroy everything with a fervent heat.

Although, God has given both the angels and human beings the freedom of choice, God is aware of every choice, before it is made. It does not lead us to fatalism, but rather to realism. As I continually say, "There is nothing hidden from God. The marvelous plans of God never need to be altered or changed. What God promises unconditionally, He also provides unconditionally. Satan and all of his evil forces cannot stop the plans of God, to be fulfilled. "Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgements, and His ways past finding out! For who hath known the mind of the Lord? Or who hath been His counselor? Or who hath first given to Him, and it shall be recompensed unto Him again? For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things: to whom be glory forever. Amen." Rom.11:33-36. Regardless of circumstances, if you belong to the Lord, He will see you through every trial and tribulation. "For it is God who worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure." Phil.2:13. God's protecting power is all sufficient for every situation! Though mankind became "Totally Depraved" through the sin of Adam, so "By Faith" man can be "Totally Saved" and acceptable in the Beloved, Lord Jesus Christ. Always remember that the Creator of Heaven and Earth took upon Himself a form of man, before the foundations

of the earth, to become the propitiation for our sins. Let us now seek to understand the Messianic hope, declared, and provided for those who believe. God has shown us in ways past our finding out, how He has kept the Messianic hope alive and available to those who would put their trust in "The Lamb of God" who has taken away the sins of the whole world.

A. THE MESSIANIC PROMISE

Satan thought he had destroyed the seed of the woman that was going to bruise his head in and through the death of Abel. Although Satan was full of all wisdom, may we remind you that the creature's wisdom can never be compared to the Divine wisdom of God. Satan was confused concerning the seed of man and the seed of the woman, and God in His sovereignty had an indestructible plan.. God's ways are past finding out, but when they are complete, we marvel at God's wonder working power. God gives us the clue to Genesis 3:15 in Isaiah 7:14. "Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." God has totally bi-passed the total depravity of man and chose a virgin through whom to send His Incarnate Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. The conception was of God the Holy Spirit, in order to bring the Eternal Son of God into this world. That body was prepared before the foundation of the world, as the Creator of heaven and earth formed the first human body and then stepped into it, becoming the Incarnate One. The Messianic lineage in itself was unique, starting from Shem, branching off to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, choosing the tribe of Judah, and selecting the Virgin Mary. It is amazing to see how Almighty God works, in ways past our finding out. As Joshua enters the promised land, a harlot by the name of Rahab was saved from the fall of Jericho to become the mother of Boaz. "And Salmon begot Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begot Obed of Ruth; and Obed begot Jesse; and Jesse begot David, the king; and David, the king, begot Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah;" (Bath-sheba) Matt.1:5-6. A Gentile by the name of Ruth and the kinsman redeemer Boaz, becomes the stem of Jesse, the lineage through which the Messiah would enter this world. We cannot understand the wonder working power of our Almighty God. Man's extremity often becomes God's opportunity. "By faith the harlot, Rahab, perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace." Heb.11:31. "Oh the love that drew salvation's plan, Oh the grace that brought it down to man, Oh the mighty gulf that God did span, at Calvary"!

That Incarnate body of Christ was 100 % like unto ours, yet without sin, having been prepared before the foundations of the world. That is why, when the sealed scroll is to be opened in the heavens, our Savior appears as "The Lamb". This is but another reminder to all believers, that it cost God the Father, His only begotten Son to become the sacrificed Lamb of God for our salvation. The Lamb of God was the only one who will be worthy to open that sealed scroll, pouring out the total wrath of God upon the ungodly of the world, during that great tribulation. It will be the beginning of the wrath of God, before that final judgement when all the demons and ungodly will be cast into the lake of fire. Praise God, there will be many souls saved during the tribulation. "After this I beheld and lo, a great multitude.....These are they who came out of the great tribulation..."Rev.7:9-17.

THE FULLNESS OF TIME

The Jewish leaders were aware of the promised Messiah, and they understood the Scripture as to where He was to be born. "But thou, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel, whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting." Mic.5:2. This is an amazing prediction, concerning the Messiah, as it mentions that He shall come from everlasting, making Him the Alpha and the Omega! God had chosen out both Mary and Joseph of the tribe of Judah, for the entrance of His Eternal Son into this world. Israel was looking for such a Deliverer and many were baptized by John the Baptist in preparations for His kingdom of righteousness. Their main desire was to have Israel restored to her National status, and not "The Lamb of God, that taketh away the sins of the world"! They did not understand that, "Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed." Isa.53:4-5. They did not understand the meaning of Psalm 22, as a picture of Christ suffering on the cross. They merely wanted a Deliverer from the heel of Rome. Even after the resurrection of the Lord, and speaking to His disciples of the kingdom, the disciples asked the Lord, "When they, therefore, were come together, they asked of Him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?" Acts 1:6. John the Baptist was proclaiming that the kingdom of heaven was at hand. God knew that the Messiah would be rejected, so He sent John the Baptist, rather than Elijah, to herald the King. Christ, Israel's Messiah, spent His 3 years teaching kingdom principles, and refrained from church doctrine. The establishment of the kingdom was postponed until Israel publicly rejected their Messiah. It was not until the Holy Spirit revealed to John, the meaning of being born of the Holy Spirit, some 20 years later that the Gospel of grace would be preached.

It was only after the day of Pentecost, when the disciples were born again of God the Holy Spirit, that they were aware of the double purpose of the promise of God, 1. That the seed of the woman has bruised the head of Satan and 2. Eventually at a future date, the Kingdom of Righteousness, at a future date, would be established. This all came as revelation from God the Holy Spirit. "But, when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore, thou art no more a servant but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ." Gal.4:4-7. This new birth, by the Holy Spirit gives us the adoption into the royal family of God. We, as born again Christians are already within that Royal family of God. We now have the Divine spark applied to our lives by this new birth. We also have become members of the heavenly body of Christ. The Lord Jesus Christ, will never leave us nor forsake us, for we will become members of the future "Bride of Christ." Thanks be unto God for His wonder working power, through His Dear Eternal son, the Lord Jesus Christ.

The revelation of the Eternal Son of God, coming into the world, has a three fold purpose.

1. To remove the barrier of sin.

2. To establish the kingdom of righteousness during one thousand years.
3. To bring in everlasting righteousness.

This will be the final test given among men, before the sentences of eternal punishment are placed upon the fallen angels and the unregenerate man. Christ came into the world to become both the sacrificer and the sacrifice. This is but another indication of the "Amazing Grace of our Loving Lord"! No one in heaven or upon this earth were found to provide redemption, and **"Very God"** was the only one who could meet the qualifications and this ultimatum. That is why a body like unto ours was prepared for the Son of God, before the foundations of the world. Christ as the Lamb of God became our High Priest forever, after the order of Melchizedek. Christ has presented His blood as a ransom for our souls and His blood has been accepted by God the Father as the propitiation for our sins.

CHRIST CAME INTO THE WORLD TO BECOME THE SACRIFICE

Since man is totally depraved and cannot approach our Holy God on his own, it was necessary for the Impeccable Christ to remove the barrier of sin, so that we can approach God the Father, clothed with His eternal righteousness, through the Lord Jesus Christ. Joseph was told directly by an angel from Heaven as to the purpose of the Virgin Mary. "Now the birth of Jesus was in this way: When, as His mother, Mary, was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit. Then Joseph, her husband being a just man, not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privately. But while he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary, thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS; for He shall save His people from their sins." Matt.1:18-21. This was God's method of bringing His Incarnate and Eternal Son into this world, to become the propitiation for our sins. He became both the sacrifice and the Sacrificer. As Christ was preparing to go to the cross, knowing the awful torture and pain that He must bear, He had to talk to the Father about it. "Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour. But for this cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again." Jn.12:27-28.

This was not a spare of the moment decision with the Triune God, but was planned before the world was. As I constantly remind my students that the ultimate plans of God were first established, knowing the end from the very beginning, Our sins as well as the sins of the whole world, had to be dealt with by Almighty God. The Eternal Son of God was willing to become the necessary supreme sacrifice, to remove the sin barrier. "Therefore, being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ." Rom.5:1.

CHRIST BECOMES READY TO FACE THE CROSS

As we bring to the close this brief study on "The Messianic Promise" may we study the closing word of the Lord Jesus Christ as He is about to fulfill the promise of God, to those who

would believe. Let us first of all examine part of that marvelous prayer of the Son of God to God the Father. "These words spoke Jesus, and lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee" Jn.17:1. One must look beyond the cross and behold as we will see the results of the cross. Christ fulfilled the promise as the Redeemer, and being the Eternal Son of God was endowed with unlimited power. "As thou hast given Him power over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as thou has given Him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent." Jn.17:2-3. The final prayers of the Lord were just before he was arrested, after the Lord's supper, a song was sung and they departed to the Mount of Olives. (Matt.26:26-30>) Christ warned the disciples that they would be offended with Him this very night, when the Shepherd of the sheep would be smitten. (Matt.26:31). Following their arrival upon the Mount of Olives, Christ spent three hours in prayer with great sweat drops of blood poured out from His body. "O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt." Matt.26:39b. "Oh my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me except I drink it, thy will be done." Matt.26:42b. This was repeated in the third hour and Christ prepared Himself as the Lamb of God, to take away the sins of the world.

It is not a light thing that the Lord took up His cross, according to the will of God the Father. So we are also admonished by Christ Himself, "Then said Jesus unto His disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it." Matt.16:24-25. We cannot take up the cross of Christ and suffer as He did, but we have our own cross, what ever it may be, and follow our Lord. "For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" Matt.16:26. May we always remember that the Eternal Son of God was doing the will of the Father, who will glorify the Lord throughout eternity. "For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He shall reward every man according to his works." Matt.16:27. (1 Cor.3:12-15; 2 Cor.5:10; Rev.20:11-15.) Because of the obedience of the Eternal Son of God, has prepared for Christ a tremendous exaltation for eternity to come. "Wherefore, God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God, the Father.". Phil.2:9-11. We as Christians have bowed the knee to Jesus and proclaimed Him Savior, Lord and Master, but the ungodly and unregenerate will bow their knees when they stand and fall before the Great White Throne, where Jesus Christ will be seated and ready to pass the final judgement upon them, having them cast eternally into the lake of fire.

B. THE MESSIANIC PROVISION

Needless to say, but necessary to remind you that God's plans to deal with any opposition to His character are always declared by God. He fully evaluates the circumstances and the necessary steps are always planned well in advance. There is a method and purpose in God's permissive will with a tremendous protecting power! Sometimes we get so wrapped up with the immediate provisions that God has prepared for us, that we loose sight of the overall purpose of God. Let me remind you that the character of the Godhead is absolute and never can be added

to or taken away. The Triune God is in need of nothing and the glory that God had before the creation is complete and cannot be added to in one iota. However, that glory which God has always had, is to be shared with His obedient and accepted creatures. In order to make this glory secure and permanent, any opposition must be dealt with and judged. Until sin expressed itself, God could not bring judgement against it. Therefore God is allowing sin to run its course to fully judge it once and forever. He sent His Eternal Son to the cross to judge every expression of evil, so that it can be eliminated entirely from the future creation which He has placed on the drawing board of eternity. When that final day comes and when the sentence of sin is completed, there will never be another evil thought, word or deed existing to mar His eternal Kingdom of righteousness. The key verse to this intent is , "Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people (Daniel's people) and upon thy holy city (Jerusalem), to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy." Dan.9:24. This truth cannot be stated any clearer than what God the Holy Spirit has revealed to the prophet Daniel. What a glorious future that all the saints of all ages will enjoy throughout eternity! Sin and every evil force will be put away forever and ever! There will be perfect harmony in the wonderful plans that God has provided. The angelic and the human choices will be perfect as we live forever in our glorified bodies.

God's timing of every phase of His plans are always at the right moment, showing His sovereignty and understanding. We have no reason whatsoever to doubt God in our personal life, when He controls every situation, past, present and future. We face a powerful enemy, but we do not face him alone! Almighty God is our ever present help. God's provision for those who believe are sufficient for time and eternity. God the Holy Spirit dwells within us forever and ever. He is our Comforter and our ever present help! That is why we have such a promise, "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4. What can we ask for more than this?

THE SEED OF THE WOMAN

Sin has left its ugly mark upon all God's creation, both through the fallen angels and the fall of the first man. This has already been dealt with, which left all of mankind, dead in trespasses and sin and totally depraved. If the cure for such condition was left in the hands of "Homo Sapien" it would have been hopeless and impossible. BUT GOD, through His great love has made a way, through His perfect character, restoring life in abundance. The entrance of the Eternal Son of God into this world, as the Incarnate one has taken place, and the Lord had laid upon Him, the iniquity of us all. God the Father has provided an escape route for all who believe and the atonement became unlimited, by the grace of God. The Eternal Son of God was the "Seed of the woman" mentioned in Genesis 3:15. that passed judgement upon all unrighteousness. God Himself made it possible to restore His creation and deal eternally with all evil forces.

The "First Lady" of all civilization was deceived by Satan, and God used her seed to retaliate and defeat the power of that evil one. God had given this sign of a virgin to Israel the guardians of the Messianic hope. "Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. "For

unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called **Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.** Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with justice and with righteousness from henceforth even forever. **The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this.**" Isa.9:6-7.

CHRIST THE KING/PRIEST

The Tribe of Judah was of the kingly lineage, and the Tribe of Levi was the priestly lineage, but Christ was appointed before God the Father as both King and priest, "After the order of Melchizedek." (Heb.5:6.) "Seeing, then, that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus, the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest who cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. Let us, therefore, come boldly unto the throne of Grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need." Heb.4:14-16. This is God's provision for all who will believe. The Lord Jesus Christ, being tempted like we are, yet without sin, has become our eternal high priest that has entered into the Holy of Holies, once and forever, bringing, grace, mercy and peace to the saints of all ages. "Though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered; and being made perfect, He became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey Him, called of God an high priest after the order of Melchizedek." Heb.5:8-10. Christ is both our high priest and king forever and has become our righteousness before God for eternity. "By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament. And they, truly, were many priests, because they were not allowed to continue by reason of death; But this man, because He continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood. Wherefore, He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them. Heb.7:23-25.

One of the amazing results that we can claim through Christ being both King and High Priest is the absolute surety that we have through the Eternal Son of God. We are also accepted in the Beloved of God the Father in whom He is well pleased. He as King of kings and Lord of lords is supreme and sovereign. As High Priest, He has entered into the Holy of Holies, once and forever, and has presented His blood, which has taken away our sins as far as the East is from the West, and never will appear again. We now have eternity to rejoice in the Lord who has secured our acceptance by His own blood!

GOD'S PROVISION FOR ETERNITY

God's provision and sacrifice for us is absolute and eternal! "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made by hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us. Nor yet that He should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must He often have suffered since the foundation of the world. But now once, in the end of the ages, hath He appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement, So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto

them that look for Him shall He appear the second time without sin unto salvation." Heb.9:24-28.

Although Satan thinks that he has brought confusion to God's plans, we know that in the fullness of time, the coming one world government under Satan will be destroyed. Praise God, we who believe and have been born of the Holy Spirit, will be taken out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess. 1:10.) God is immutable and never has to change His plans, knowing the end from the beginning. God's provision is not dependent upon His creatures, but is completely dependent upon Himself to fulfill our every need, even to the provision of faith. "Looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith," Heb.12:2a. "To God be the glory, great things He hath done"! And we may also add, "To God be the glory, great things He has prepared for the future"! We all as students of the Bible have been given wealth beyond description in the Lord Jesus Christ. "O Lord, our Lord, how excellent is thy name in all the earth, who hast set thy glory above the heavens." Ps.8:1.

DRAWING NEAR UNTO GOD WITH BOLDNESS

God admonishes us to accept His provisions for time and eternity. "Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which He hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, His flesh, and having an high priest over the house of God, Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for He is faithful that promised)," Heb.10:19-23. As we draw near unto the Lord with boldness, let us also be mindful of one another as members of the body of Christ. "And let us consider one another to provoke unto love and to good works, not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is, but exhorting one another, and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching." Heb.10:24-25. Yes, the day is rapidly approaching the coming of the Lord to rapture us out from the wrath to come, and taking us to the Father's heavenly mansions. Having studied the terrible events of the tribulation, and the "One World Government Under Satan", we become aware of the present events, world wide, with the socialistic trend. It becomes very essential that we keep in close touch with the Lord, through the reading of the Word, and being guided by God the Holy Spirit. Be a workman for God who will continue in His Word, and lean not upon your own understanding.

God's provision for us in these last days is sufficient. May we allow God to strengthen us through the Word, establishing our confidence in the Lord. "Cast not away, therefore, your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward. For ye have need of patience that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise. For yet a little while, and He that shall come will come, and will not tarry. Now the just shall live by faith; but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition, but of them that believe to the saving of the soul." Heb.10:35-39. Don't be satisfied by merely tasting God's Word, but feast upon the deep things which God has declared unto us who believe. There are too many Christians who, because of their worldliness, cannot be partakers of the deep things of God. They are trying to exist on the milk of God's Word rather than the meat

of God's Word. Student of the Lord, "Be strong in the Lord"! Study God's Word and be well established with great confidence in the finished work of the Eternal Son of God.

C. MESSIANIC RESULTS

Since the Bible is complete and no further revelation is necessary, we must study the Word carefully and review the results of the fulfillment of the promise of the Messiah. God's planning, with His sovereignty has brought the promise of a Deliverer through some 4,000 years up to the cross. As there were two aspects of the Messianic promise in the Old Testament, 1. A suffering Savior, and 2. A Kingly Deliverer. This was confusing to Israel who waited upon God to Deliver her from the heel of the Roman Empire, forgetting their need of the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world". They were not prepared for the Messiah to be, "But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed." Isa.53:5. They did not expect their coming High Priest and King to be both the sacrifice and the sacrificer. During Christ's earthly ministry He mentioned at various times that the Father sent Him to lay down His life for the sheep. John the Baptist declared Him, as the Lamb of God who taketh away the sins of the world. God gave His only Begotten Son, that whosoever believeth, might have everlasting life. "But God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved." Jn.3:17. John the Baptist's separated and dedicated life was the spirit of Elijah and the Lord eulogized John as a great and obedient witness for the Lord. There were many under the ministry of John the Baptist that identified themselves with the coming kingdom, repenting and were baptized. John the Baptist had only 6 months of ministry before he was called of God to his heavenly home. As John's ministry was coming to a close, he began to doubt as to whether Jesus was the Messiah. "And John calling two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come? Or look we for another?" Lk.7:19. When these disciples arrived in the presence of the Lord, and asked this question, "Then Jesus, answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard - how the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached." Lk.7:22. John was faithful to the Lord unto death and note what the Lord had to say for His servant John the Baptist. "For I say unto you, among those that are born of women that there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist;" Lk.7:28a. John the Baptist was the substitute for Elijah, because God in His omniscience was aware that Israel would reject their Messiah. This present "Mystery Age" has been hidden away, until Israel made her decision to reject their Messiah.,

THE MYSTERY AGE

Abraham was declared by the Lord to be the blessing of many nations and although he had Isaac as the heir, yet a vast land was promised to Abraham as well as to multiply his seed beyond numbers. "And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth, so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered." Gen.13:16. God promised that the Messiah would come through Abraham's seed, of the tribe of Judah, and the root of Jesse, and it was so. Christ is to appear the second time, fulfilling the second phase of the

Messiah, as recorded in the Word. "The Lord also shall roar out of Zion, and utter His voice from Jerusalem, and the heavens and the earth shall shake; but the Lord will be the hope of His people, and the strength of the children of Israel. So shall ye know that I am the Lord, your God, dwelling in Zion, my holy mountain; then shall Jerusalem be holy, and there shall no strangers pass through her any more." Joel 3:16-17. However, phase one of the Lord's coming to rule and reign is the "Mystery Age", known as "The Age of Grace", or the formation of the body of Christ, His church adorned to become His bride. This was sparked off on the day of Pentecost, as prophesied. "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions". Joel 2:28. This referred directly to the day of Pentecost as confirmed by Peter. "But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words; For these are not drunk as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. But this is that which was spoken through the prophet Joel: And it shall come to pass in the last days saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams." Acts 2:14-17. This out pouring of the Holy Spirit became the beginning of the mystery age, as God for some 2,000 years has been calling precious souls from all nations. Although there were only Jews present on the day of Pentecost, yet this out pouring came upon the Gentiles as well. Note these important Scriptures, which need to be studied very carefully. The Samaritans, the Africans, the Gentiles and the Old Testament saints were all reached. (Acts 8:17; Acts 8:26-39; Acts 10:44; Acts 19:1-7.)

THE SIN BEARER OF THE WORLD

This mystery age was of great importance in the plan of God and it was part of the results of the Incarnate and Eternal Son of God coming into this world. The kingdom teachings were provided during Christ's earthly ministry, but the postponement of the kingdom of righteousness was affirmed. God in His omniscience was aware that Israel would reject her Messiah, and consequently John the Baptist was first sent as the spirit of Elijah, with the mystery age to follow. Satan knew that Jesus was the Messiah and he thought that he had everything going his way in this rejection of Him by Israel. The crucifixion of Christ was the final testing as to whether the Eternal Son would allow himself to be crucified. The Godhead was aware of all of this and everything was going according to plans. It was prophesied that the Lord would be sacrificed for the sins of the whole world. "He was taken from prison and from judgement; and who shall declare His generation? For He was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgression of my people was He stricken. And He made His grave with the wicked, and with the rich in His death, because He had done no violence, neither was any deceit in His mouth. Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise Him; He hath put Him to grief. When thou shalt make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days, and the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in His hand. He shall see the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied; by His knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities." Isa.53:8-11. "When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers.....What is man, that thou art mindful of him? And the son of man, that thou visitest him?" Ps.8:3-4.

THE FIRST FRUITS OF THE RESURRECTION

The sacrifice of the impeccable Son of God was necessary if the barrier of sin and judgement should be paid and removed. Our new life promised because of the resurrection of the Lord is secured and because He lives, we shall also live. "That Christ should suffer, and that He should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should show light unto the people, and to the Gentiles." Acts 26:23. We who believe, have died in Christ and will not have to face the penalty of sin, for we have been made alive through His resurrection. "For we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection." Rom.6:5. It took the very God Himself to be sacrificed in order to remove the barrier of sin. Because Christ lives, we shall live also and be like Him in a glorified body. (1 Jn.3:1-3.) That resurrection which has started in Christ, is the next great event to occur, when the dead in Christ are raised from the dead and we which are alive shall be changed and given our glorified bodies. (1 Thess.4:13-18.) The Old Testament saints shall be raised from the grave, and enter into the presence of God in their glorified bodies. The New Testament saint from the day of Pentecost until the Rapture will be raised and changed and will be the Bride of Christ to live with Him forever! (Rev.19:1-10. The first resurrection will then take on another phase for there shall be tribulation saint that will be raised from the dead in preparation and occupation of the kingdom of righteousness. During the Kingdom age there will be believers who will die during the 1000 years and they will make up the completion of the first resurrection. (Rev.7:1-17; Rev.14:1-5; Rev.20:4-5.) This is part of the results of the Messianic provision that God promised would come to pass. "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." Rev.20:6. The Messianic plan extends throughout all ages among all who believe in Christ their Redeemer. The results of God's promise will be eternal, bringing in everlasting righteousness, where sin will never appear again. Yes, there will be various groups who will take part in this first resurrection, but this will take place at various times as I have indicated. There will be no general resurrection, but each group in their order. The final resurrection, or known as the second resurrection will consist of the "Death Line" of all ages, made up of the unregenerate of all ages. Their resurrection will take place when Christ is seated upon the Great White Throne. Since their names are blotted out of the book of life, their final judgement will cast them into the eternal lake of fire as an eternal living death. There will be no second chance after the great white throne judgement, and their great unpardonable sin will not be their personal sins, but rather their rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal Savior. The present hell or Sheol is misery enough, but the Lake of Fire will be far worse. They will live with hell and death forever, which will be cast into this eternal lake of fire with them. (Rev.20:14-15.) There will be no escape routes whatsoever! We as believers need to take heed to God's precious Word. "Therefore, we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip." Heb.2:1.

A KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS PROMISED

During the Lord Jesus Christ's earthly ministry, He taught kingdom principles, offering Himself as Israel's king, but they rejected Him. God in His omniscience had included their

rejection in His eternal plans and had carefully hidden away the mystery age. This is providing the Lamb of God with His bride until the Rapture takes place. The tribulation will follow the Rapture of the saints which will exist for seven years, and then the Lord will return with His bride and the Old Testament and Tribulation saints and rule and reign a thousand years in righteousness. We will be studying this great period of time, when Christ shall return and defeat Satan and the ungodly, during the battle of Armageddon and set up His kingdom, using a rod of iron. (Ps.2:9; Isa.11:1-4; Rev.2:27; Rev.12:9; Rev.19:15.)

The saints of God shall be a kingdom of priests and travel throughout the whole world, proclaiming the righteousness of God to all the nations. "And hast made us unto our God a kingdom of priests, and we shall reign on the earth." Rev.5:10. That will be a special privilege of all of the saints as we reach all the people of the earth with the kingdom teachings, according to those principles that Christ taught during His earthly ministry. We will have absolute protection as Christ rules with the rod of iron and being in our glorified bodies, we will never die or be destroyed. That in itself should be a great testimony and witness to the nations. However, we must also realize that these human beings will have a totally depraved nature and will be able to resist with their freedom of choice. There will be many millions of people born during that thousand year period, and they will, individually, have to make their choice. We do know that many will resist and be ready followers of Satan when he will be released from the bottomless pit, after the thousand year reign of Christ. "And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after that he must be loosed a little season." Rev. 20:1-3. "And when the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle; the number of whom is as the sand of the sea." Rev.20:7-8 This will come to pass after the thousand year reign of Christ and as you see, Satan will influence and deceive many, in spite of them living under righteous principles. There will be many, during the 1000 year reign of Christ, who will resent God's righteousness and they will be ready to follow Satan, being of a rebellious mind. We will discuss these truths more fully as we study things to come. The results of the Messianic promise and provision will conclude with all evil forces, whatsoever, will come to an end. Satan will lead his demons and the unregenerate of the kingdom to their doom. Evidently, all the saints will be called back to Jerusalem, either in conference with Jesus Christ, or called back, as Satan musters the millions together from around the world to attack Jerusalem. These forces led by Satan will be persuaded that with sheer force they can capture Christ and have Him killed as at His crucifixion. "And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever." Rev.20:9-10. We will deal with these events in the following Bible study. It was important that we get a glimpse of the results of God's promise, provision and results of the coming of the Messiah, the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ. We need to be thoroughly established, through the Word of God, in the Lord Jesus Christ. He is our all in all

and constantly need to give Him the pre-eminence in every phase of our Christian life. "For it pleased the Father that in Him should all fullness dwell. Col.1:19.

LOOKING FOR A CITY BUILT BY GOD

God's promise dating back to Genesis 3:15. is deeply established in the whole Bible. Spiritual hopes were manifested as sacrifices continued among the faithful, covering their sins until the Supreme sacrifice of God would be provided. That was accomplished at the cross. Abraham led a life of faith and great expectation. He was a man of great wealth and could have built himself a gorgeous mansion, establishing a city of his own, but on the contrary, he lived in a tent all of his life. This was his way of witnessing to the nations around him "For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God." Heb.11:10. Abraham never saw that city, and lived his whole life with great anticipations, and one of these days, Abraham will dwell in that city built by God. This is also part of the result of God's Messianic hope.

Our lives as Christians have the testimony and witness as all those who have gone on before, and we can rest assured that all that God has promised will come to pass! "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders received witness. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear." Heb.11:1-2. All of those saints of God recorded in Hebrews chapter 11, are still waiting for the fulfillment of God's promises. "And these all, having received witness through faith, received not the promise, God having provided some better things for us, that they without us should not be made perfect." Heb.11:39-40. God desires only the absolute perfection for all who put their trust in Him. This He has provided through Christ. That perfection will come in God's own time. The plan of God is certain and nothing has happened or can happen of which God is not aware, and His plans remain the same. It is imperative that we as believers understand the will of God for our lives, and allow God the Holy Spirit to guide and direct us into all truth. "Wherefore, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God." Heb.12:1-2.

God has allowed believers, through the teaching of the Holy Spirit to understand many principles in the Divine viewpoint. The reason why the majority of Christians fail to know these marvelous truths and practice them in their lives is because they are conformed to this present world system. Many of them will be saved so as by fire, for they only produced "Wood, Hay, and Stubble" in this present life. Their attitude is usually, "Let someone else do it"! Such miss out on the deep and precious blessings of God. We become strong in the Lord as we become partakers of the strength of the Lord. We must constantly remember, "But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a people of His own, that ye should show forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; Who in time past were not a people but are now the people of God; who had not obtained mercy but now have obtained mercy. Dearly beloved, I beseech you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul." 1 Pet.2:9-11.

May we as fellow believers be strong in the Lord and defeat the devil as he tries to defeat God's purpose in our lives. We are looking not only for a City whose builder and maker is God, but we are desiring that eternal glorified body through which we can serve our Lord. May God grant you understanding of the Bible through God the Holy Spirit. Always remember that you are not your own, but you belong to the Lord Jesus Christ, who loved you enough to die for you. Let God the Holy Spirit search out your heart, as He desires to keep on filling you with Himself, so that you may be able to glorify the Lord Jesus Christ. "Behold. what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the children of God; therefore, the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not. Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is. And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself even as He is pure." 1 Jn.3:1-3 We who are believers need to realize that Christ's perfect purity has been shared with us , for anything short of that is not acceptable in the sight of God the Father. "If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affections on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life , shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory." Col.3:1-4. As we battle for the Lord against the wiles of the devil, putting on the whole armor of God, let us do it with great anticipation! Faith is our victory and we can by the power of God, overcome, the world, the flesh, and the devil.

CONCLUSION

As God placed a hedge around Job's life, being sovereign over all, so you and I can depend upon the Lord to constantly protect us from the onslaughts of all evil forces. The Messiah is our Savior, Lord and Master and someday will reveal that tremendous power that He has always had as the "Ancient of Days", the "Alpha and Omega". We are His future bride, as members of the body of Christ. "Who is the image of the invisible God, the first - born of all creation: (His Incarnation) For by Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominion, or principalities, or powers - all things were created by Him, and for Him; And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist. And He is the head of the body, the church; who is the beginning, the first - born from the dead, that in all things He might have the pre - eminence." Col.1:15-18. God grant to each of you as students of the Word of God the richest blessings from our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. The Bible is filled with evidence of the mighty power of the Triune God, and I repeat again, "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4.

Brother and sister, "In the Lord", take heed to the Word of God, and allow God the Holy Spirit to guide you into all truth. He has been sent to us, not only to comfort us, but to be our Teacher in the things of God. We already have the Divine spark through being born of the Holy Spirit, which has brought Divine life to us, let's continue to manifest the mighty protecting power in our lives. "And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another." Gal.5:24-26.

Since God has provided complete protection for His own, then those who belong to God ought to be well pleasing to God in all things. "Furthermore, then, we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, so ye would abound more and more." 1 Thess.4:1. If by any chance you are not abounding more and more in the Lord, then there is sin at your door! "This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh." Gal.5:16. "What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer in it? Know ye not that, as many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? Therefore, we are buried with Him by baptism into death, that as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall also be in the likeness of His resurrection;" Rom.6:1-5. As I close this chapter concerning God's protecting power, may each of us make our stand in Christ secure, manifesting God's power in and through our lives. "But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son, cleanseth us from all sin." 1 Jn.1:7.

We are faced with this world system, the flesh and the devil with all the evil forces working against God's plans and we as children of God are going to be continually confronted with these evil forces. Since we belong to God, we are enemies of all evil forces. That is why we , "Likewise, reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Let not sin, therefore, reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in its lusts. Neither yield your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin, but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness of God. For sin shall not have dominion over you; for ye are not under law but under grace. What then? Shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. Know ye not that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are whom ye obey, whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness? But God be thanked, that whereas ye were the servants of sin, ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. Being, then, made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness." Rom.6:11-18.

Christ our Savior has completed the necessary requirements, fulfilling the law in our stead. God has thoroughly dealt with sin, and judged the sum total of all sin at the cross. The Eternal Son of God, our Messiah, "Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; We have turned everyone to his own way, and the Lord has laid on Him the iniquity of us all." Isa.53:4-6. The Lord Jesus Christ has provided all of the protecting power necessary to win the battle against the evil forces. We have God the Holy Spirit within us forever, the Lord has provided the full armor to withstand the fiery darts of Satan, and God the Holy Spirit is our teacher, guiding us into all truth through the eternal Word of God.

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER FOUR

- 1. Does God ever have to change His plans because of Satan? Scripture.**
- 2. Where do we find the first promise of the Messianic hope?**
- 3. Write briefly on,"The Promise from the Seed of the Woman". Use Isaiah 7:14; and Galatians 4:4-5.**
- 4. Give us some important lineage of the Messiah from Shem.**
- 5. Explain Micah 5:2.**
- 6. When did the Incarnate body of Christ first begin? Scripture.**
- 7. What is Christ's twofold purpose in coming into this world? Scripture.**
- 8. How did Christ enter this world the first time?**
- 9. How will Christ come again? Scripture.**
- 10. Write briefly on "Christ Facing the Cross". Use Scripture.**
- 11. What is God's ultimate aim according to Daniel 9:24?**
- 12. Why do we believe in unlimited atonement? Scripture.**
- 13. How did Christ merit to be both King and high priest?**
- 14. Explain Hebrews 9:24-28 and Hebrews chapter 11.**
- 15. How do we draw near unto God? Scripture.**
- 16. Give as many events as possible of the Messianic results.**
- 17. What is "The Mystery Age"?**
- 18. What was the final test that Christ endured upon earth?**
- 19. Write briefly on "The First Fruits of the Resurrection".**
- 20. Why does Christ have to rule with a rod of iron? (Isaiah 11:1-4; Psalm 2:9; Revelation 2:27; Revelation 12:9.)**

CHAPTER FIVE



THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED

CHAPTER FIVE

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED

INTRODUCTION

THE COMING OF THE LORD

The battle of Armageddon has a definite timing according to God's eternal plans, and we know when it shall take place. It will be after our "Air Lift" to the heavenlies and after the tribulation and before the millennium. There has been much confusion and misunderstanding as well as misinterpretations concerning God's revelation of the coming of the Eternal Son of God in the clouds for His own and the coming of the Eternal Son of God with His own, to set up His kingdom of righteousness. The meeting in the clouds with the Lord, gives us great anticipations, when the saints of all ages receive their glorified bodies. Christ has been preparing a special place in the Mansions of the Father for nearly two thousand years, and the living saints as well as those in Paradise will receive their glorified bodies. There will be great rejoicing in heaven when we arrive and enjoy those prepared mansions for seven years. While we are enjoying the wonderful fellowship in heaven, this earth will be passing through seven terrible years of tribulation, when the wrath of God is poured out upon the ungodly, who will join forces with Satan and his army of demons.

Let us go back to Christ's earthly ministry, as He foretells concerning His coming. Here is a very important truth. "In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also. And where I go ye know, and the way ye know." Jn.14:2-4. Christ did not speak much about His coming for the saints, but it was revealed by the Holy Spirit in the Epistles. However, please note what Christ had to say when He was on trial before Caiaphas the high priest and the sanhedrin. (Mk.14:53-65; Matt.26:57-68). Here is what the high priest asked Christ. "I adjure thee by the Living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God." Matt.26:63. Jesus' answer was very important as well as significant. "Jesus saith unto him, thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, hereafter shall ye see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven." Matt.26:64. The first part of Christ's statement was perhaps fulfilled when they stoned Stephen, the first martyr of the church. (Acts 7:54-60.) Stephen was God's witness, who saw Jesus standing on the right hand of God, waiting to receive his spirit, as they stoned him to death. The latter part of what Christ told them is yet to be fulfilled. "And coming in the clouds", from heaven is to be fulfilled at the time of the Rapture. Until this day, Israel, the Jewish nation has rejected Jesus as the Messiah. The people of Israel cried, when Pilate washed his hands (Matt.27:24), "Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children". Matt.27:25. To this day Israel has suffered because of this, and will be cast into the Great Tribulation for seven years of punishment.

As we ponder upon this important event to take place in God's time, which could be imminent, may we patiently wait, not folding our hands selfishly, but witness to these truths with

a passion for lost souls. When the body of Christ is complete, then that trumpet will blow, calling us home. As the Lord was sent forth by the Father, so the Lord sends us into the "Regions Beyond" to testify to the saving grace of our loving Lord. Israel is rapidly moving back into her land according to God's plans and will be there for her final punishment, which is known as "Jacob's Trouble". (Jer.30:7.) This is a very important indication that the Rapture is soon to take place. As Israel receives her final punishment for rejecting the Messiah, there will also be a great revival, started by those 144,000. young people from among the Jews. In fact the number will be so great that they cannot even be counted. (Rev. 7:9-14.

ISRAEL'S SIGN OF THEIR FINAL PUNISHMENT

Though many Jews accept Jesus Christ as their personal savior and become members of the body of Christ, which is the living church, yet as a nation, they have refused to accept God the Father's Eternal Son. They now will be awaiting, as they return to their land, their final judgement during the Great Tribulation. Whether they actually see the coming of the Lord in the clouds, there is one thing that is certain, and that is, the greatest "Air Lift" will take place and there will be missing persons everywhere and many grave yards will look like freshly plowed fields, "And the dead in Christ shall rise first". (1 Thess.4:16b.) Today the Jews are being gathered back into their own land, after being scattered for centuries. They were re-instated as a nation in April 1948. They have their own government but reject the Lord Jesus as the Messiah, but when the Rapture takes place, there will be 144,000. young people out of Israel who will be come the witnesses to the coming Messiah, to set up His kingdom of righteousness. This will alert all of Israel as well as the Gentile nations, and many will turn unto the Lord in spite of the tribulation that will follow.

We are drawing very near to the time when Israel's clock will start ticking again. There have been 483 years of the Seventy times Seven as in the Book of Daniel and we have but seven more years to fulfill this complete prediction. That last week spoken of in the Book of Daniel will be fulfilled during the Tribulation. The Lord spoke to the disciples about these things in Matthew 24. "Now learn a parable of the fig tree (Israel): When the branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is near; So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled." Matt.24:32-34. Since Israel has been re-instated as a nation in 1948 and a generation is approximately 50 years, so that would bring us to the year 1998, or 2000 according to the count of days in a year. This great revelation of the Son of God coming in the clouds will no doubt be similar to what the Centurion and those that were with him witnessed when they beheld the crucifixion of our Lord. "And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints that slept were raised, and came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many. Now when the centurion, and they that were with him watching Jesus, saw the earth quake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God." Matt.27:52-54. We do not set any dates, but we watch the signs of Israel as to the count down for the Rapture. God is giving us signs of the time. The clouds are forming for the return of the Lord "In The Air".

THE "AIR LIFT" TO COME

To the Christian and the Old Testament saints, the Rapture will be one of the greatest events of all time. The Old Testament saints who offered sacrifices, covering their sins, will be raised from the graves at the time of the Rapture. As they receive their glorified bodies, based upon their belief in their Messiah the Lord Jesus Christ. Their personal identification will be made complete with that glorified body. We shall see the Lord in His shikinah glory, surrounded by His angelic hosts as well as the saints of all ages. We shall see the Lord "face to Face"! (Phil.3:21; 1 Cor.13:12; 1 Jn.3:2.) Bearing such vital truth in mind, it is important that we understand the difference between the coming of the Lord in the clouds for His saints and the coming of the Lord to the holy City with His saints.

Before we review the coming of the Lord to fight the battle of Armageddon, and establishing His 1000 year kingdom of righteousness, let us examine briefly the event of the Rapture and the events that follow in heaven during the great tribulation. I have purposely left these two phases of the coming of the Lord, to review the heavenly events during the tribulation and the earthly reign of Christ. Let us glance at some of these important Scriptures, referring to the Lord coming in the clouds. "For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first." 1 Thess.4:16. This shout and trumpet with an heavenly voice will bring forth the dead in Christ of all ages. There will be countless multitudes coming forth from the grave to meet their spirits in the sky, giving identifications to those coming forth with the Lord from Paradise. These will be identified as Old Testament saints and those of the mystery age of grace, known as the body of Christ, destined to be the bride of Christ. There was a brief form of resurrection when Christ rose from the grave, but this will be a complete resurrection of the saints of all ages, to meet the Lord in the air. Those human bodies from the graves, regardless of time element, will be caught up and receive their glorified bodies and be joined together with their spirits which will return with the Lord from heaven. "Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord." 1 Thess.4:17. This is going to be a glorious meeting in the air as we are changed and made like the Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Jn.3:1-3.) Please note the direction that we will be going in, when the Rapture takes place. There is a great deal of preliminary events to take place before the kingdom of righteousness, upon the earth is established. "Christ has been preparing a place for all believers in the Mansions of God the Father. "I will come again, and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also." Jn.14:b. "Behold I show you a mystery: We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed." 1 Cor.15:51-52. We who will be alive and remain as Christ appears in the clouds, will have our first look upon Christ, and our happy reunion with our loved ones who are waiting for that fabulous "Air Lift". All the saints of all ages will be included during this great event. That will be a glorious scene to behold as well as thrilling to be part of it. As we labor for the Lord, we do not know just who will be that final member of the body of Christ which will cause the Rapture to take place. Watch the signs of the time, work as God's witness and wait for the sound of the trumpet.

GOD'S CHOSEN MESSIANIC LINEAGE - SATANIC OPPOSITION

Throughout the ages of mankind, God has had to choose men of faith to protect and keep His testimony and preserve His perfect plan for all ages. The Holy Spirit used men of God to write and others to keep the Messianic lineage. God called Abram to be chosen from the family of Shem through whom He would send His Only Begotten Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan has been the arch enemy of God ever since his rebellion. Satan deceived Eve, and has continued with his lie, setting himself up as the god of this world system. Satan knows the Bible and is aware that God promised to bruise his head through the seed of the woman. (Gen.3:15.) Here are a few Bible references that you should study so that you can better understand the power under the sovereignty of God that Satan has been given when he first was created. Satan's position was taken from him, but he still has power. (Isa.14:12-17; Job 1:6-22; Job 2:1-8; 2 Cor.4:3-4; Mk.4:15; Lk.22:31; Acts 5:3; 2 Cor.2:11; 2 Cor.11:14; 1 Thess.2:18; 1 Tim.5:15; Rev..2:9-10; 2 Tim.2:26; Heb.2:14; 1 Pet.5:8; Ezek.28:12-15.) As these Scriptures are read and studied you will discover that Satan is a powerful enemy, hindering the preaching of the Gospel when the sovereignty of God will permit. He has been responsible in putting God's people into prison, the lions den, burned at the stake, and he often comes as an angel of light, brain washing unbelievers. he oppresses, he lays traps for God's children and he deceives the nations. Satan has tried to hinder the coming of the Lord but failed every time. To this very day, Satan is trying to deceive believers with all kinds of lies about the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ. "Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple. For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil. And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen." Rom.16:17-20.

Some two thousand militant and radical women met in Minneapolis, Minnesota in 1993 re-imagining paganism with a woman goddess like unto the goddess Diana of Ephesus. They called her "Sofia" which in the Greek language means "Wisdom". It has become the revival of paganism and sadly enough, it is coming from U.S.America under the cloak of the World Counsel of Churches. This is but another way that Satan is deceiving the blind and re-capturing them by thrusting them into idol worship. Greater is He that is in you than in the world, and we need to depend upon God the Holy Spirit to give us wisdom through the Word of God. We cannot fight this battle alone and that is why God has provided us with spiritual armor to withstand the fiery darts of Satan. We must constantly realize that he is the god of this world system and the "One World Government" under him will come to pass. Fight the good fight of faith as we face this wicked one in our Christian life.

THE COMING OF THE LORD IN THE CLOUDS

After Christ was raised from the dead and walked and talked with His disciples for forty days, the disciples were still thinking of an immediate kingdom to be established for Israel. According to Acts 1:3; Christ had been speaking very much about the kingdom of God, but

there was one question in the mind of the disciples, "When they therefore were come together, they asked of Him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?" Acts 1:6. Through disobedience, the Jews had been sent into captivity and became slaves to many nations because they forgot God. Jesus Christ came to earth to be the Redeemer, as the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world. They knew that King David and his seed was promised the throne forever. "But my mercy shall not depart away from him (King David), as I took it from Saul, whom I put away before thee. And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee: thy throne shall be established for ever." 2 Sam.7:15-16. Read also the following. (1 Chron.17:12-14; Psalm 132:12; 1 Ki.8:23; 1 Ki.9:5) The disciples knew from prophecy that God would establish the kingdom of Israel, but they wanted to know when God would establish it, Christ answered them, "And He said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power." Acts 1:7.

When these statements were made, the Lord was lifted up into heaven before their very eyes. The first message from heaven is of great importance. "And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold two men stood by them in white apparel; Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen Him go into heaven." Acts 1:10-11. "He is coming again, He is coming again, this very same Jesus, rejected of men, He is coming again."! It is of the greatest importance that we as Christians are prepared for the coming of the Lord in the clouds to deliver us out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10) and enjoy those seven years in Paradise with the Lord and with the saints of all ages. When the bowls of wrath are poured out upon this earth, completing the final judgements of God against the ungodly, then we will be alerted and ready to mount those heavenly horses, and return to earth with the Lord and His angels. This will be a gathering that we will never forget. Descending upon this earth in the shikinah glory of God, with Christ leading the countless glorified beings. Suddenly, we will be met by the evil forces of Satan, attempting to resist the King of kings, and Lord of lords, as He leads us forth to establish His kingdom of righteousness upon this earth. We will face that anticipated battle of Armageddon. But before we leave that heavenly scene as the Rapture takes place, let us spend a little time reviewing some of the saints preparations for reigning with Christ during the Kingdom age. God has given us a little foresight into what we will be doing in those heavenly mansions. This will all be in preparation for us as a kingdom of priests, during the Millennium.

EVENTS FOLLOWING THE RAPTURE

Before we review the battle of Armageddon, let us just spend a little time investigating as to what we as the saints of God will be doing in heaven during those seven years of tribulation. We are reminded while waiting for that trumpet sound to keep clean for the Lord. "Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are His; and, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity." 2 Tim.2:19. So while we wait for the Lord to come in the clouds, make sure that we keep washed in the blood of the Lamb, as we confess our sins to God the Father. (1 Jn.1:9.) "For if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged. But when we are judged we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world." 1 Cor.11:31-32. Although this is

specifically dealing with our cleansing prior to communion, yet it applies to our daily walk with the Lord as believers. There will be the final judgement against all believers, when we arrive in heaven after the Rapture. Get rid of as much wood, hay, and stubble now, so that it will be removed before we stand before Christ at His judgement seat. (2 Cor.5:10.)

THE JUDGEMENT SEAT OF CHRIST

We as believers are secure in Christ Jesus and blessed with all spiritual blessings in Him. We have been given eternal life and we will not be with the ungodly at the great white throne judgement. But we will have to give an account to Christ as to our faithfulness during our life span. This will take place at the judgement seat of Christ. (2 Cor.5:10.) Our sins will not be the issue, but rather our faithfulness in this life upon the earth. By grace are we saved, but by our faithfulness during our earthly life, the Lord will determine our rewards and responsibility that He will give when we enter into the kingdom. "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them." Eph.2:8-10. You may ask the question, "What place do good works of the believer have toward his salvation"? Our good works have nothing to add to or take away from our salvation. Our sins have been fully paid for on the cross by the Eternal Son of God. But our good works verify our faith and express our thanks to God and contribute toward our rewards. It is of great importance concerning our appreciation of the finished work on Calvary by the Lord.

Let us search the Scripture and establish our position with this important matter. "For we must all appear before the judgement seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad." 2 Cor.5:10. "For other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble- Every man's work shall be made manifest; for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall test every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built upon it, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss; but he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire." 1 Cor.3:11-15.

The receiving of our glorified bodies when the Rapture takes place, will be based entirely upon the finished work of the Lord Jesus Christ, at the cross, for we shall because of His resurrection and God the Father is satisfied because Christ is our High Priest before the Father. In the first chapter of the Book of Ephesians we understand that all spiritual blessings are in Christ Jesus. We are also declared secure according to Romans chapter 8. The Holy Spirit also revealed this truth to the Apostle John, "My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, who gave them to me, is greater than all, and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's hand. I and My Father are one." Jn.10:27-30. There are some Christians afraid of this truth and may say, "Well, if it is all settled when I believed in Christ as my personal Savior, then I am at liberty to do as I please". Oh no you aren't for the Holy Spirit spoke through Paul, "What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death?" Rom.6:1-3. We have a new birthright which is based on the finished work of Christ, and not based upon our works or human righteousness. The loss that you will suffer will be a special "Well Done" from the Lord, as we stand before His judgement seat. Yes, we will all appear before the judgement seat of Christ, concerning our good works upon planet earth. There will be a cleansing and purifying effect at this judgement and some will have but ashes remaining from their wood, hay, and stubble. God's Word reminds us, "And behold I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his works shall be." Rev.22:12. The difference between the saints and those who will stand before the great white throne, is we shall be tried by fire, and the ungodly shall be cast into the lake of fire, to be tormented forever and ever.

THE MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB OF GOD

After the church or the Bride to be, as well as all of the Old Testament saints have received their rewards and responsibility for faithfulness, then they will be made ready for that great marriage to the Lamb. The heavenly choirs will sing forth in triumph. "And I heard as it were, the voice of a great multitude, and like the voice of many waters, and like the voice of mighty peals of thunder, saying, Hallelujah! For the Lord God Omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints." Rev.19:6-8. The Old Testament saints will be the special guests of Christ, the Messiah. "And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are true sayings of God." Rev.19:9. We as the saints of the mystery age of Grace, will have that special place along side of the Lord, as the body of Christ, while the Saints of all ages will be seated at the other tables. No doubt the breaking of bread will also be a part of this ceremony. This marriage will be of great importance to those from the day of Pentecost until the Rapture, for they will be the sum total of the body of Christ.. The Shikinah glory will shine forth in the mighty power of our Triune God. We not only are of the Royal Family of God, as the other saints, but will be the eternal Bride of Christ! We are not told the details of the marriage and there will be no need of a marriage rehearsal, for we will be well instructed in advance. The angelic hosts of heaven will act as our ministering aids in all these preparations. Our Bridegroom has been preparing a place for each member of His bride in His Father's mansions. May we serve our Lord faithfully in this present life with great expectations for the wonderful things to come.

THE LORD'S SUPPER FOR THE SAINTS

This feast of reality will be of great significance to both the Bride, and the friends of the Bridegroom. The remembrance of the death and resurrection of Christ, the Lamb of God, will be with the deepest love to our Living God. To the Old Testament saints it will mean their sins which were covered for hundreds of years have been removed as far as the East is from the West. To the church which will be the Bride of Christ, it will mean a great price has been paid

for her redemption by the Bridegroom. Those scars and wounds will be carried throughout eternity by the Lamb of God, and will be very precious to His Bride. To Christ, who is the Lamb of God, it will mean the fulfillment of the vow He made to His disciples in that upper room. "And He said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves: For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come." Lk.22:15-18. That will be a glorious day, as we feast with the Lord and all of the saints of all ages. No doubt the angelic hosts will prepare this great supper, with a chorus of angels singing to us, with the heavenly orchestras, playing for our entertainment. It has been God who has given us the delicious foods in this life, and we know that the heavenly foods will be far superior to anything that we have ever tasted upon this earth. The best is yet to come and may we patiently wait upon the Lord who will bring it to pass. We serve a wonderful God who loves us and gave His Eternal Son to redeem us out from the wrath to come.

THE MANSIONS PREPARED FOR THE SAINTS

That special bridal chamber will be well prepared by Christ in the mansions of our Heavenly Father. The Old Testament saints will also have their place made ready for them. "Let not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also." Jn.14:1-3. These few statements are of great importance to us, for it gives us the key to the timing of the Rapture and the second coming of the Lord to establish His kingdom of righteousness. We as the saints of God will be enjoying the heavenlies with the angels, and changed into our glorified bodies, as has been mentioned before. We will have a seven year briefing in heaven, and being prepared and assigned our commission, at that time, for service during the thousand year kingdom of righteousness. As we have previously studied, the tribulation cannot begin until after we have been raptured out from the wrath to come upon the whole earth. (1 Thess.1:10) We will behold the Lion of the tribe of Judah, receiving the sealed scroll and begin to open the seals, in order that the wrath of God will fall upon the earth. (Rev.5:1-14.) There will be seven seals opened and the results are found in Revelation chapter six. These judgements will be but a preliminary as to what will follow. Some of these judgements will come through the demonic realm and others directly from God. The important factor is that there will be a terrible judgement fall upon this world, after the saints are "caught up". Don't let anyone tell you that the church is going to go through the tribulation. It is not scriptural! Further more the tribulation is "Jacob's Trouble" (Jer.30:7.) and not the churches' trouble, as the church was not born by the Holy Spirit until the day of Pentecost. This is a very important issue that we must understand, as we rightly divide the word of truth. The second part of the tribulation will intensify, when Satan and all of his fallen angels are cast out of heaven forever. They will be cast upon this earth during the latter half of the tribulation, which will zero in on "The Abomination of Desolation. Michael the archangel shall muster his army of angels together and battle against Satan and his fallen angels,

THE HEAVENLY BATTLE

Regardless of some speculation as to whether Satan still appears in Heaven, we have a clear example of this in the Book of Job. "Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them." Job 1:6. Satan's position was taken away from him, but his power remains. Lucifer, having made his choice to oppose God, has become God's enemy number one. He is also very busy accusing the saints of God, day and night. (Rev.12:10.) Praise God that we have an Advocate with the Father, the Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Jn.2:1.) Praise God, when that fifth trumpet sounds, Satan and all of his demons will be cast out of heaven forever. (Rev.9:1-11.) This battle is briefly mentioned in the Book of Revelation. "And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels (demons), and prevailed not, neither was there place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him." Rev.12:7-9. This will limit Satan to planet earth and he will attempt to destroy all of the tribulation saints (144,000 and converts) But there will be many that will flee to the hills which will be prepared by God as a place of refuge. This will be the beginning of the Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel and confirmed by Christ. (Dan.9:27; Matt.24:15-22.) This heavenly battle will cause the following events. to take place upon the earth, while the saints of the Old Testament and the true church are safely in the heavenly realm.

- 1. The treaty or covenant with Israel to be broken which the Beast will make. (Dan.9:27.)**
- 2. The temple worship to cease. (Dan.9:27.)**
- 3. The last half of the tribulation, under the direct power of Satan. (Rev.12:3-6; Rev.12:13-17.)**
- 4. The release of a great army of demons in the bottomless pit (Rev.9:2-11).**
- 5. Another great army of demons will be released from under the Euphrates river. (Rev. 9:13-21.)**
- 6. Satan will take command as he gathers the ungodly together, and with his demons will attempt to prevent Christ's coming for the battle of Armageddon. He will muster together the armies of the world, with their nuclear weapons, thinking that they can stop the out of space attack, by Almighty God.**

A. THE BATTLE OF ARMAGEDDON

This great battle of Armageddon will be fought in the valley of Megeddo, which is west of Jordan separating between Samaria and Galilee, that great valley, which was called Esdraelon, or the valley of Jezreel. (Josh 17:16; Judg.6:33.) It is the valley which Napoleon said, "You could put all the armies of the world in it and still have room." Well that will happen at the end

of the tribulation, when the Lord comes with all of His saints and angels to battle against the sum total of all evil forces, under the leadership of Satan. It is going to be a quick, but terrible slaughter with the horses sinking into that swampy area and the blood running up to the bridles of the horses. "And the winepress was trodden outside the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.", Rev.14:20. (A furlong is approximately 600 ft.)

John on the Isle of Patmos was given the vision of this coming battle of Armageddon, which is the second phase of the coming of the Lord to set up His kingdom of righteousness. "And I looked and, behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat, like the Son of man, having on His head a golden crown, and in His hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to Him that sat on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle, and reap; for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe. And He that sat on the cloud thrust in His sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped. And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. And another angel came out from the altar, who had power over fire, and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God." Rev.14:14-19. This is a preview of the harvest that will take place when the Lord destroys the ungodly nations of the world under the power of Satan and his demons. This earth will see the greatest deliverance from the evil forces, in preparation for the coming Kingdom of God. The angels of God will cast in their sickles for the harvest as the wrath of God is poured out upon planet earth.

The sound of battle will go forth as we watch the evil forces clash with the holiness of God. The great hosts from heaven will not need a single weapon, but we will all be clothed with those fine linens which are the righteousness of the saints. There will be but one arrayed for battle, and that will be the Eternal Son of God, the Incarnate Christ. "And I saw heaven opened and, behold, a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns; and He had a name written, that no man knew, but He Himself. And He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and His name is called The Word of God. And the armies that were in heaven followed Him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean." Rev.19:11-14. We will be the spectators, as we watch the King of kings and Lord of lords, defeat these deceived nations under the power of Satan. Their nuclear attack will be useless and without an effect. We all will have entered into the spiritual realm which cannot be harmed in anyway by the material realm.

THE SATANIC FORCES IN THE VALLEY OF MEGIDDO

Here we will behold the triune evil forces gather against the Eternal Son of God. "And I saw three unclean spirits, like frogs, come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of demons, working miracles that go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to battle of that great day of God Almighty." Rev.16:13-14. The Lord will set the time of this gathering for that final battle, as He comes to set up the thousand year reign of

righteousness. "Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. And He gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon." Rev.16:15-16. As we will ride into outer space descending upon this earth, the Lord Himself will be ready to meet the enemy single handed, regardless of the millions that will gather against Him. "And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him that sat on the horse, and against His army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshiped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of Him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of His mouth; and all the fowls were filled with their flesh." Rev.19:19-21. This will be the supper which all of the fowls that fly shall feast upon. "And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the Great God." Rev.19:17. The death toll will be so extensive that the vultures from many lands will have to be beckoned to the feast of the slain. These that will be slain by the Lord will be a gathering of the ungodly nations from every direction, including the hordes from the East. "And the sixth angel poured out his bowl upon the great river, Euphrates, and its water was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared." Rev.16:12. This will bring the nations of the world together, so that the wrath of God might be poured out upon the ungodly, as they try to challenge His authority. As the Psalmist says, "The Lord shall have them in derision", Ps.2:4b. Now the evil forces led by Satan are in direct battle array against God the Father and His Eternal Son. The wrath of God will be poured out against all evil forces. It will be absolutely hopeless for all the mighty power of Satan, the demons and the armies of the world to make a stand against Almighty God. The winepress of the wrath of God will be poured out upon them.

THE WINEPRESS OF THE WRATH OF GOD

This is that which was foretold to Daniel concerning "The Stone which was cut out without hands" That great image which Nebuchadnezzar saw, revealing the great Empires, Babylon, Medo Persia, Greece and the Roman Empire, will be utterly destroyed during the last days of the Revived Roman Empire. "Thou sawest until a Stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon its feet that were of iron and clay, and broke them to pieces. Then were the iron, the clay, the bronze, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them; and the Stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth." Dan.2:34-35.

During the tribulation, the ungodly nations will focus their attention upon the Middle East and especially Jerusalem. The wealth of the oil fields and the Dead Sea will be the target and the Beast will make a 7 year covenant with the nation Israel, for personal gain. This vow will be broken in the middle of the seven year agreement, for the Beast will have things under his control, as Satan and the demons give him all the power that he needs. It will be called, "The Abomination of Desolation", foretold in the Book of Daniel and confirmed by Christ. (Dan.9:27; Matt.24:15.) God's wrath will be poured out upon the nations during those days. "Behold, I will

make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all peoples; all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the nations of the earth be gathered against it. In that day, saith the Lord, I will smite every horse with terror, and his rider with madness; and I will open mine eyes upon the house of Judah, and will smite every horse of the peoples with blindness.....In that day shall the Lord defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be like David; and the house of David shall be like God, like the angel of the Lord before them. And it shall come to pass, in that day, that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem." Zech.12:2-9.

During this great array of heavenly creatures in outer space, there will no doubt be a moment of great silence, as the satanic armies sight in their nuclear weapons on this heavenly display. As we have already quoted that the beast and false prophet will be cast alive into the lake of fire and brimstone, by the angels of God. The ungodly armies will be destroyed by the Word of the Lord. You may wonder why the Lord will not throw the devil and his demons immediately into the Lake of fire, but God is first going to separate them from His creation for one thousand years, and release him for a season, after the millennial reign. God's ways are past finding out, and we must thoroughly depend upon Him. For that thousand year reign, under perfect conditions, depraved man will only have himself to blame, if he rejects the righteousness of God. When Satan is released from his prison for a season, we are told by God's Word, that the ungodly will allow themselves to be deceived by Satan, that devil and serpent. Satan will be released after the thousand year reign. During Christ's reign in righteousness, Satan and the demons will be bound and in prison in the bottomless pit for the duration of the thousand years. But when Satan is released from his prison, he will again go among the nations deceiving them. The nations will respond and be numbered as the sands of the sea, and attempt to destroy God. But at this point, Satan's doom will be a thousand year sentence to the bottomless pit, chained and helplessly falling and never to reach the bottom.

SATAN SENTENCED TO 1000 YEARS PRISON TERM

Satan was given the key to the bottomless pit, releasing a whole army of demons for the Great Tribulation. (Rev.9:1-11.) But after the battle of Armageddon, he will be bound and thrown into the bottomless pit for 1000 years. He will be descending into this pit and never touching bottom for the duration of the kingdom of righteousness. A seal will be placed upon Satan forbidding him to deceive the nations during the kingdom age. "And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after that he might be loosed a little season" Rev.20:1-3. Remember that Satan was given the key to the bottomless pit? (Rev.9:1.) That key that Satan will have will become useless, when he is cast into the bottomless pit. There will be a chain around him and a seal placed upon him and continually drop into the depth of space for the thousand years. During the kingdom age there will be a perfect environment, no poverty and a perfect government, people born during the kingdom will have to make their own choice of whether they will serve God or mammon. They will still have their totally depraved bodies, which were inherited from Adam and Eve, and will

have to make their own choice within their heart. The great tribulation has made a lot of pollution on the earth and there will have to be a clean up time with restoration of the land and temple before the kingdom of righteousness can be established. This cleansing of the temple will take a little time before it can be occupied by the kingdom saints. The whole temple area has been contaminated with idol worship and must be cleansed.

B. THE CLEANSING FOR THE KINGDOM

With all of the pollution, during the tribulation, there will of necessity be plenty of waste and trash to be cleared away. This will no doubt be used as compost for restored nature to work with. It will take some time for this to be accomplished. Daniel was given two sets of days, one with just the tribulation days of 1290 days and another one of 1,335 days. He was given this revelation, "Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and ninety days" Dan.12:12. We are not told specifically as to what the difference of 45 days consists of, but we know that there will be a lot of cleaning to be done for the Lord to establish His kingdom. The pollution from the water ways will be a tremendous task in itself. However with all of nature restored there will be great developments throughout the whole world. Those countless idols will have to be destroyed, and the places of evil practice will be removed, and the shikinah glory of God will be manifested throughout the world. The Saints of all ages, in their glorified bodies will be in charge of the details of this cleansing. One of the very important tasks will be for the cleansing of all of the temples and churches, making them available for the teaching of the kingdom of righteousness. There will be open doors throughout the whole world for the teaching of the righteousness of God.

THE CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

The second beast which comes up from the land of Israel who is also called the false prophet, will have special power from Satan and will cause miracles. "And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men And he deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast that had the wound by a sword and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed." Rev.13:13-15. The image will be set up in the temples and previous church buildings and many who would not take the mark of the beast or worship his image will be killed, as we have a preview of these. "And I saw, as it were, a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God." Rev.15:2. The beast's image will be set up in the temple at the time that the seven year covenant is broken and the temple worship ceases. "And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease." Dan.9:27.

The temple will have to be cleansed as the image of the beast will be removed. This desecration of the temple had previously been made in the days of Antiochus Epiphanes. "Then

I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said unto that certain saint who spoke, How long shall be the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trampled under foot? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed". Dan.8:13-14. This will be repeated during the latter part of the tribulation, when Satan takes over complete controls upon the earth. The contamination from idol worship will have to be cleansed, when the Lord comes to establish His kingdom of righteousness. It will be a glorious day when the earth and the temple in Jerusalem are fully cleansed and the glory of the Lord shall be spread abroad. "And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east; and His voice was like a noise of many waters, and the earth shined with His glory." Ezek.43:2. In order for the Lord to begin His kingdom of righteousness, He must remove all the ungodly, and that has been foretold to us, as the shepherd separates the sheep from the goats. The kingdom of righteousness will begin with the righteous tribulation saints, who will come out from the tribulation. These will be scattered throughout the world, being from among those specific number of the Jews who will flee to the hills and a place of refuge provided for them by Almighty God. These will not have their glorified bodies as the Old Testament saints, the tribulation saints and the bride of Christ. They will be earthly people capable of having longevity of life and producing very large families. These will be the sheep, separated by Christ for the duration of the kingdom.

SEPARATION OF THE SHEEP FROM THE GOATS

In order for the Lord to start out with a righteous kingdom ruled with a rod of iron, there will have to be many court cases throughout the world. This could be done by the Lord simultaneously throughout the world. Do not confuse this judgement with the final judgement. This will precede "The Great White Throne Judgement" when the ungodly of all ages will have to stand before the Lord Jesus Christ (Rev.20:11-15.) This separation of the sheep from the goats will take place at the beginning of the kingdom of righteousness. "When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory. And before Him shall be gathered all the nations; and He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats. And He shall set the sheep on the right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world." Matt.25:31-34. This truth is very important to us as to who will enter into the kingdom of righteousness. Christ is represented in this separation as "The King" and the sheep will be those who "inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world". As you read through the following verses, you will discover that these are tribulation saints who helped provide for Christ's Hebrew brethren. "And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.: Matt.25:40. Here is what is said about the goats who are the ungodly of the tribulation, "And these shall go away into everlasting punishment," Matt.25:46a. The ungodly of all ages will eventually have to stand before "The Great White Throne" and be eternally judged, and cast into the lake of fire, to be tormented forever, separated from God eternally. Satan and all of his billions of demons will also be cast into this lake of fire, after the thousand year reign of Christ. For the duration of the kingdom, Satan and his demons will

be sealed off in the bottomless pit. Their release for a season will occur after the millennium. However, when the great battle of Armageddon is fought, the two beasts will be cast alive into this eternal lake of fire. They will feel the terrible heat from the fire and their bodies will be burnt to a crisp, and then their spirits will be tormented forever in this same lake of fire. These events will be dealt with separately. Let us now consider the coming kingdom of righteousness. This will be the final stage that God will use in allowing a perfect kingdom of righteousness to be given to the earth dwellers. Under perfect conditions, totally depraved man will have his last choice of desiring the kingdom of darkness or the kingdom of light.

C. THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED

The kingdom of righteousness which was promised to the Old Testament saints will be established. The Old Testament saints will enter into this glorious kingdom of the Lord. The early writings of Enoch tell of the Lord coming with ten thousands of His saints. (Jude 14,15.) Although Job had very little of the written Word, he was aware of the resurrection and seeing God. "And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God" Job.19:26. Abraham and all of his believing descendants will be partakers of the kingdom. "By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing where he went. By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a foreign country, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise; For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God." Heb.11:8-10.

God has established this coming kingdom and Christ who is the King of kings and Lord of lords, will reign. During Christ's earthly ministry He taught the principles of the kingdom of righteousness, which will be administered to the whole world with a rod of iron from the Holy City Jerusalem. We as the saints of God will be sent throughout the world to teach the rules and regulations of the kingdom of righteousness. This kingdom has been promised prophetically in the Old Testament and many specific features of the kingdom have been declared. These can be found throughout the Old Testament as a preview of what the kingdom will be like. Jerusalem will be the capital of the world

THE PROMISE OF A KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS BY GOD

The Prophetic Aspects of the Kingdom of Righteousness

From the days of Adam and Eve, God has always given mankind his own choice as to whether he would obey and serve God or not. Throughout the Old Testament and into this present age of grace, it is up to each individual person to decide for himself, as to whether he will commit his life to Jesus Christ the Eternal Son of God for salvation, or not. Each one has the option of receiving eternal life with God or rejecting God's provision and suffer the consequences of eternal damnation. This is the freedom of choice that God has offered to every human being.

God gave the prospective records of the coming Messiah to Israel, as His ambassadors to the whole world. He promised a kingdom of perfect righteousness through His Eternal Son and

they rejected Him, and will continue to suffer the consequences during this age of grace and throughout the tribulation to follow. God in His omniscience, knowing that they would reject His Eternal Son, waited until after they had made their choice, before He presented this present "Mystery Age" of Grace. It is also known as "The Church Age", forming the body of Christ. During this age of Grace, God is calling out a bride for His Son from all races of people. Had Israel accepted Christ as their Messiah, then God would have sent Elijah, rather than John the Baptist to herald the King of kings and Lord of lords. However both Moses and Elijah were seen on the Mount of Transfiguration to Peter, James and John, which is definitely related to the Kingdom to come.

Let us look at some of the Biblical references in prophecy of the coming King and kingdom. It is first of all very essential that a real king have the proper lineage of royalty, as well as the title deed to the land. All of this was provided and prepared by God the Father of the Lord Jesus Christ. The Messianic lineage was to come through Abraham, to whom God Gave land from the Euphrates to the River Egypt. "Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will show thee;" Gen.12:1. God did not allow Abram to possess the land immediately but desired that a great nation would be established and kept together through the means of slavery in Egypt, learning many skills and becoming a hardy people. "In the same day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates." Gen.15:18 God made an unconditional covenant with Abraham to give this land to him and his seed. This, of course only applies to the seed of Abraham as to a specific land through Isaac, to whom was given all of Abraham's inheritance. (Gen.25:5; Heb.1:2.) "The Magna Carta" of all this is clearly presented in Genesis chapter 12. It has not been given as to a set time, but rather for an everlasting possession. (Gen.13"14-15.) In order to protect the Abrahamic royal lineage, God had to specifically choose the tribe of Judah, and then narrow it to "The Root of Jesse". (1 Sam. 16:12-13.) This was not a choice for only king David, but for a dynasty that would be everlasting! "And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots." Isa.11:1. The finality of this can be traced all the way to the Revelation of Jesus Christ. "...behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David..." Rev.5:5.

God never promised king David that he or his sons would continue to reign over the land, but rather, he would never lack for a son to rule, which of course looked forward to the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, through the Davidic lineage. "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that I will perform that good thing which I have promised unto the house of Israel and to the house of **Judah**. In those days, and at the time, will I cause the **Branch** of righteousness to grow up unto David; and he shall execute judgement and righteousness in the land. In those days shall **Judah** be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, **The Lord Our Righteousness**. For thus saith the Lord: **David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of Israel**: Neither shall the priests, the Levites lack a man before me to offer burnt offerings, and to kindle meat offerings, and to do sacrifice continually." Jer.33:14-18. The Lord Jesus Christ fulfilled all of this as King/Priest, after the order of Melchizedek. (Heb.7:1-7.) We may also turn to the Book of Jeremiah for further reference to the Messiah. "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a **Righteous Branch**, and a **King** shall reign and prosper, and

shall execute judgement and justice in the earth. In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is His name whereby He is called, **The Lord our Righteousness**." Jer.23:5-6.

It is not an insignificant event with the Scripture declaring it so clearly. It is no effort for God to give mankind previews of coming events and even televise them to us through His witnesses. The Book of Revelation is a clear example of this. Then take for instance, the prediction in Ezekiel 44:1-2. "Then he brought me back the way of the gate of the outward sanctuary which looked toward the East; and it was shut. Then said the Lord unto me, This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the Lord, the God of Israel, hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut." Thus was actually fulfilled after the Lord Jesus Christ's "Triumphal Entry " into Jerusalem through the golden gate. (Matt.21:1-9; Mk.11:1-10; Lk.19:29-38; Jn.12:12-19.) The Lord Jesus Christ, who presented Himself to Israel as their King, riding upon the colt of an ass as foretold in Zechariah 9:9, entered Jerusalem through that "Golden Gate", presenting Himself as their King, and was rejected. That Eastern Gate was sealed and closed because the King of kings had passed through it as God said that it would. There is absolutely nothing hidden from God, and it behooves us to keep in God's wonderful fellowship through the Lord Jesus Christ. God has called us into this marvelous royal life with Christ, so let us obey His voice in our daily life. God has sent the Holy Spirit to be our guide and teacher.

God will share the coming of the future kingdom with the saints

The earliest prediction that we have concerning the coming kingdom of righteousness is found in Genesis 3:15. This battle has been a continual warfare against the evil forces ever since the fall of Lucifer, in the heavenlies. We have seen this confrontation through upright Job. Then we have the case of Enoch, with whom God walked, and gave him many personal revelations of both the Lord's coming and of the coming judgements. (Gen.5:21-24.) Here are a few words which we still have of Enoch's prophecies. "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh **with** ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which they have ungodly sinners have spoken against **Him**." Jude 14-15. Man did not just stumble upon talking, writing and reading, but was taught by God Himself. If God was able to confuse and change the one language into many languages, He certainly gave man his first language.

We have already mentioned how God made an unconditional covenant with both Abraham and David, and certainly this is a personal communication with mankind. God was capable of walking and talking with Adam, Enoch, Job, Abraham, David, Daniel, Ezekiel, Jeremiah and many of the kings, priests, prophets and servants. Isaiah was given both the sign of the virgin birth of the Messiah, the restoration of Israel, and the coming kingdom of righteousness. "Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold **the virgin** shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel." Isa.7:14. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called **Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace**. Of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end, upon **The Throne of David**,

and upon His kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgement and with justice from henceforth even forever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this." Isa.9:6-7. God has continued this personal contact with His own down through the ages. Note a portion of Isaiah chapter 11. "And the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord,.....But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth;..... They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain; for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, who shall stand for an ensign of the peoples; to Him shall the nations seek, and His rest shall be glorious." Isa. 11:2-10. Also note the following revelation from God. "But in the last days it shall come to pass, that the mountain of the house of the Lord shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills, and people shall flow unto it. And many nations shall come, and say, Come, let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us His ways, and we will walk in His paths; for the law shall go forth from Zion, and the word of the Lord in Jerusalem. And He shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore." Mic.4:1-3. That day will be fulfilled when the Lord reigns in righteousness. There will be no war during the entire thousand years.

The Actual Conditions that exist before The kingdom is established

The actual conditions of Israel when God promised "The Kingdom of Righteousness" were very bad. It seemed impossible that a change for the good was possible. "Man's extremity is God's opportunity", and God kept the blessed hope alive among the remnant. We during this age of grace are aware through the Bible that the battle is spiritual and is greater than flesh and blood can cope with. We as Christians are supplied with special armor and are told to constantly be arrayed with it. "Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Eph.6:11-12. May we as believers always remember that our weapons of warfare are not of flesh and blood, or of material substance, but rather of a spiritual matter. "The weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds." 2 Cor.10:4. We are especially confronted with the satanic influence over the whole world. Remember, and I repeat, Satan had his position taken away from him, but he still has his power, with freedom of choice under the sovereignty of God. This power has extended to the indwelling of the ungodly, and the brainwashing of those who enter this world through birth. "But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them." 2 Cor. 4:3-4. May I also remind you that God has not supplied us with armor for our backs! Therefore, we must face our enemy fully equipped with the armor of God! We face a tremendous satanic pressure that is present throughout the whole world. Study the Biblical and secular history of the world and you will soon discover the power of darkness and spiritual wickedness in high places under the hand of Satan. We must reckon

with the power which has been granted to him, and fully depend upon God the Holy Spirit, to withstand his wicked onslaught. Note with Ezekiel 28:12-17, the high position in which Lucifer was created. He was created the greatest and most powerful angel of all time and has power to counterfeit everything that God offers, but can only do this as God permits.

During the Lord Jesus Christ's earthly ministry, the kingdom of God was taught in preparations for the coming kingdom of righteousness. The beatitudes and requirements by God were fully declared by the Lord. The parables portrayed the conditions under the coming kingdom of God. One would have thought that the Lord would have taught church doctrine after His resurrection, when He was with the disciples for the 40 days, but on the contrary, He continued with kingdom teachings. Perhaps the greatest reason for not dealing with church principles was the Holy Spirit was not yet present fulfilling Joel 2:28. The disciples were ready for Israel to be delivered from the heel of Rome (Acts.1:6-7.), but Christ came to declare a universal kingdom of righteousness. This was all in preparations for an eternal kingdom of righteousness, which would follow the Millennium and become part and parcel of the New Heavens and the New Earth. God has thoroughly dealt with all sin at the cross of Calvary, but the complete judgement of sin will come when the great white throne appears, and all the ungodly of all ages will stand before the Lord. Their final sentence will be the eternal lake of fire which will consist of a living death as God's wrath is poured out against them forever.

God's fullness of time for the kingdom of righteousness

May I remind you that you can depend upon Almighty God to be on time for every promise that He offers. In the fullness of time God fulfilled His promise of sending forth the Eternal Son of God. (Gen.3:15; Isa.7:14; Gal.4:4-5.) There are certain events to take place before that kingdom of righteousness can be established. We have studied that in chapter 5, and I will barely mention some of the high lights necessary before "Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done". The timing by God is always at the right moment and we can thoroughly depend upon Him to bring to pass every event, according to His Word. The preparations for the kingdom must be made and certain events must precede the establishment of the kingdom promises. Since Israel rejected their Messiah, Elijah was not sent forth, but John the Baptist came in his stead. This age of grace has been planned by God the Father, Son and Holy Spirit before the foundations of the world. God in His immutability has an ultimate aim and purpose for all things. We have listed some of these purposes for your further study.

Preparations for the Kingdom Leadership

God the Father will order the coming of His Eternal Son to deliver us out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) He alone knows the time. "It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in His own power. " Acts 1:7. Briefly here are events which must take place before the kingdoms of this world become "The Kingdom of God". Note carefully these signs which must take place before the Kingdom of Righteousness can be established. There are particular signs which God has given to us, for our satisfaction and understanding.

1. **The Regathering of Israel back in the Promised Land. (Deut.30:3-5; Isa.11:11-12; Isa.14:1-3; Isa.27:12-13; Jer.16:14-16; Ezek.11:11-12.)**
2. **The Rapture from the dead of all the saints of God, and those that will be alive. (1 Thess.4:16; John 14:2-3; 1 Cor.15:51-58; 1 Thess.1:10.)**
3. **The opening of the sealed scroll by the Lamb of God, so that the great tribulation can begin. (Rev.5:1-18:24.)**
4. **The Great Tribulation. (Matt.24:4-28; Dan.9:27; Mk.13:5-13; Lk.21:8-11; Mk.13:24-27; Lk.21:29-33; Matt.24:29-31.)**
5. **The Judgement Seat of Christ. (1 Cor.3:12-17; 2 Cor.5:10.) This is for the giving of rewards to the saints, according to their faithfulness.**
6. **The seals of the book must be opened in heaven in our presence. (Rev.4:1-5:14.)**
7. **The marriage of the Lamb of God to His bride. (Rev.19:7-10.)**
8. **The Great Lord's Supper in Heaven. (Mk.14:22-25; Lk.22:17-20; Jn.13:12-30; 1 Cor.11:23-34; Matt.26:29.)**
9. **The Heavenly Battle, casting out Satan and his demons upon Planet Earth. (Rev.9:1-11; Rev.12:7-12.)**
10. **The Abomination of Desolation. (Dan.9:27; Matt. 24:15.)**

All of these events will take place before the Lord returns for the battle of Armageddon, to clear the way for setting up His kingdom. Christ was the first fruits of the resurrection and the Rapture of all the Old Testament saints as well as the New Testament saints will be the results of Christ's resurrection. The first resurrection will have another phase, after the Great Tribulation, when these saints are raised, who will be slain during the tribulation. Then we will see the final phase of the first resurrection take place among the Millennial saints. This will precede the second resurrection, when the ungodly of all ages are raised from the dead and brought before The Great White Throne judgement.

We have now studied all the preparations for establishing the "Kingdom of Righteousness" upon the earth and are now ready for the reign of a thousand years of the Eternal Son of God. As we have seen, the Lord will have the victory from the battle of Armageddon, the temple will be cleansed and then "The World Rule" of Christ will begin. It would be a sorrowful plight, if all that mankind could look forward to is a world kingdom under Satan. We know that Satan is

the god of this world system and when the Lord returns to set up His eternal rule of righteousness, then Satan's rule will be finished forever.

THE KING IS COMING

God has promised the eternal kingdom of righteousness which would first be established upon this present earth. This kingdom was first promised to king David, stating that he would never lack for a son to reign. (2 Sam.7:16,24; 1 Chron. 17: 11-13; 1 Ki.8:23; 1 Ki.9:5.) We have a very early record of the coming of the Lord through Enoch, the seventh generation from Adam. "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him." Jude 14-15. God the Holy Spirit has also spoken through Paul and others of this great event. "To the end He may establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all His saints." 1 Thess.3:13. This message is very important both to every believer, making up the total "Body of Christ", as well as the Old Testament saints. The first appearance of the Lord will be during His coming for His saints, and as He comes to set up the kingdom of righteousness, he will come with His saints.

When the Lord returns to Planet Earth, He will establish His righteousness with a "Rod of Iron". The Lord gave His disciples a model prayer which will fully be established during the kingdom age, "Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done". (Lk.11:1-4; Matt.6:9-15.) The earthly teachings of the Lord will reach around the world, through the saints of all ages. During that reign of righteousness, we read, "And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdom of this world is become the Kingdom of our Lord, and of Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever. And the four and twenty elders, who sat before God on their thrones, fell upon their faces, and worshiped God, Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and has reigned." Rev.11:15-17. This of course will cause the ungodly of all the nations to be angry, as the judgements of God will be upon the nations as Christ separates the sheep from the goats in His Millennial reign. "And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants, the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them who destroy the earth." Rev.11:18.

These things will happen after the Rapture of the saints and the great tribulation. God always has His perfect timing and is in no hurry, but is allowing the cup of iniquity to be filled and since all sin was judged at the Cross, the sentences will be carried out in God's time. The ultimate end is to remove sin and evil forever from the coming new creations of Almighty God. We have already dealt with the battle of Armageddon as found in Revelation 19:11-20:3. This will bring on the after effects of the battle of Armageddon, and the resurrection of those tribulation saints who were martyred during that time. "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them; and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and who had not worshipped the beast, neither

his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years." Rev.20:4. The tribulation saints are part of the first resurrection, which began with Christ, and will continue with the Rapture, and then the tribulation saints which were slain will be raised in their glorified bodies. This is all in preparation for the coming Millennium.

Our preparations for the kingdom age is also of great importance. We need to study the Word of God thoroughly. Here on earth we are going through our "Boot Training" in preparations for teaching the nations during the thousand year reign of Christ upon the earth. This kingdom will go on into eternity, after Satan and his demons are cast into the lake of fire. The ungodly dead of all ages will be called up from the grave and stand before the Great White Throne to be judged and then cast into the lake of fire. Because of the blight of sin that contaminated both the heavens and the earth, God will destroy both the present heaven and earth with fervent heat. (2 Pet.3:10.) This will be the eternal end of wickedness, and God will create a new heavens and a new earth, for all eternity to come. (Rev.21:1-27. What a day of rejoicing that will be!

The question that is often asked, "What will the thousand year reign of Christ be like?" One must study the entire Bible very thoroughly to find the answer to this question. I will list some of the changes that will take place during those thousand years, with the Scripture references. The saints of all ages will be well prepared to rule and reign with the Lord during the Millennium. With the Rapture of all of the saints that have died, God is granting to them, glorified bodies in the heavenlies, waiting for the kingdom to begin. This will be a period of seven special years in heaven being prepared as a kingdom of priests to be sent throughout the world with the gospel of the kingdom. Jerusalem will be the capitol of the world, and Christ will start His eternal reign of righteousness. Here are some of the Biblical references to the kingdom characteristics and teachings.

1. **Christ of the Tribe of Judah and the son of David shall reign as the Incarnate one, God/Man. (2 Sam.7:16; Isa.11:1.)**
2. **The world shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord and His righteousness. (Isa.11:1-5,9-10.)**
3. **Nature shall be restored, as in the day of creation. (Isa.11:6-8. Isa.65:25.)**
4. **The remnant of Israel shall be restored to her land. (Isa.11:11-14., Isa.65:9-14.)**
5. **There will be plenty of food for everyone and there shall be no reason for hunger to exist in the kingdom of righteousness. (Ps.72:7,16; Isa.65:9-10, 18-24.)**
6. **There will be no war whatsoever for the thousand years, as peace will reign upon the whole earth. (Mic.4:3)**
7. **With Christ as the light of the world, the whole earth will be a kingdom of light. (Isa.30:26; Ps.98:9.)**

8. With no diseases to contend with, the earthly people will live hundreds of years, as they enjoy a peaceful world. (Isa.65:20.)
9. The whole world will be the kingdom of righteousness as a universal empire, under the Lord Jesus Christ. (Mic.4:2.)
10. All churches and temples will be places of worship, glorifying Almighty God through Christ Jesus. (Zech.6:12-13; Zech.14:16.)
11. There will be no demonic power, as Satan will be bound and continually fall into the bottomless pit for the duration of the thousand years. (Rev.20:1-3.)
12. The saints of all ages will rule and reign with Christ in their glorified bodies. They will be a kingdom of priests, as well as ruling the governments of the whole world, under the authority of Christ. (Rev.5:10; Dan.7:22.)
13. Christ's kingdom shall not be of this world system under politicians, but will be established under the power of Almighty God. (Jn.18:36; Rev.19:15; Rev.20:4.)
14. Although the kingdom of righteousness extends for one thousand years, yet it will continue into eternity when the New heavens and the new earth are created. (2 Sam.7:16; 1 Chron.22:10; Ps.45:6; Ps.145:13; Dan.4:3.) Satan has tried his very best to control mankind and confuse him as to what God has promised. Satan has been counterfeiting every possible promise and commitment which God has made, but utterly fails.

THE CLEANSING OF THE WORLD ORDER

There is much that could be said concerning the coming kingdom of righteousness, for it will be a glorious period of time as we approach the culminating victory of God over all unrighteousness. The whole world order will be cleansed as was previously taught from the Holy Spirit's revelation to Daniel. (Dan.12:6-12.) With all of the pollution that will take place during the tribulation, the Lord Himself will have to accomplish a cleansed world order. It was John the Baptist who said, "And now also the axe is laid unto the root of trees; therefore, every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into fire. I, indeed, baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear; He shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit, and with fire; Whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor, and gather His wheat into the granary, but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire." Matt.3:10-12. Now turn with me to Matthew 25:31-41. Here are a few statements taken from this important passage of Scripture. "When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, **then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory; and before Him shall be gathered all nations;** and He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats" Matt.25:31-32. We have discussed this before, but I just want to remind you that Christ's reign upon this earth will

start out with a world wide division and separation, with the ungodly destroyed. May I remind you that this is not a final judgement for the ungodly, but they will be raised from the dead and be judged at the Great White Throne. This is called the second resurrection, which sentence them to an eternal living death in the Lake of fire.

While Christ was presenting Himself to Israel as their Messiah and King in order to set up His kingdom, He did purge the temple at least twice. Here are the references which you can check for accuracy. (Jn.2:13-16; Mk.,11:27-33; Lk.20:1-8; Matt.21:12-16; Mk.11:15-18; Lk.19:45-47.) Christ cleansed the outer courts which were set aside by God for the Gentiles, as their place of worship. The Jews refused to let them use it, but made it an open trade market for the temple. Christ had absolute authority to use force, as the King/Priest, after the order of Melchizedek. (Heb.5:5-10; Heb.7:1-3;) However, the thorough cleansing will have to take place, after the tribulation, as it will be contaminated by the anti-christ. It will be desecrated by the beast and his images. The temple, land and the nations will be purged and cleansed in preparation for the kingdom of righteousness.

Christ has given us a series of parables in conjunction with this cleansing by the fire of baptism. It was very necessary that Christ in person set forth these kingdom teachings, during His earthly ministry. Let us quickly review some of these parables. The church principles were postponed until after Pentecost, for Christ came to establish the kingdom teachings in preparation for the second advent, when He would bring in the kingdom.

1. The Parable of the Talents (Matt.25:14-30.)

For the kingdom of heaven is like a man traveling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to every man according to his ability; and straightway took his..... journey.....After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoned with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou delivered unto me five talents; behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of thy lord.....Then he that had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee, that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou has not sown, and gathering where thou hast not spread, And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth; lo there thou hast what is thine. His lord said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, Take, therefore, the talent from him, and give it unto him who hath ten talents.....And cast the unprofitable servant into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

This is followed by the Lord telling of Himself coming in His glory with all of His angels to set up His kingdom of righteousness. "When the Son of man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory". Matt.25:31. As you read the following verses, you discover that this will take place when the Lord separates the sheep from the goats in preparation for the kingdom.

2. The Separation of the Sheep from the Goats (Matt.25:31-46.)

The thousand year reign of Christ will require a complete cleansing throughout the whole world, and will begin with Satan in chains with all of his demons cast within the bottomless pit. (Rev.20:10.) Nature will be restored and the seas and the rivers will be replenished by the Lord. Those ungodly who will remain in this world when Christ comes to rule in His second advent, will be classified as the goats. They shall be brought before the Lord, placed on the left hand. "Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels;" Matt.25:41.

These will consist of those with the mark of the beast, as well as those who worshiped the image of the beast. May I remind you that this thousand year reign of Christ will have righteous sheep, but are still of the totally depraved nature and will be the human beings of the kingdom. May I also add that they will be producing many children, as in the early history of mankind. The earth will be replenished during the kingdom age, and the children of these just parents will have to make a choice of their own, as to whether they will serve the King of righteousness, or rebel. They will be an easy mark for Satan, when he is released for a season, after the thousand years. (Rev.20:3; Rev.20:7-10.)

3. The Parable of the Sower (Matt.13:1-17; Lk.8:4-10; Mark 4:1-20.)

During the kingdom age, we shall go forth and teach the righteousness of God to all those in the whole wide world. The kingdom of the earthly people will have a choice to accept or reject, but will be refrained from immediate action, as Christ will be ruling with a "Rod of Iron". This seed from God's Word shall be available to all, but please note. "And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth;.....And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up. and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. and other fell on good ground, and it did yield fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty fold, and some sixty, and some an hundred." Mk.4:5-8. This was difficult for the disciples to understand. "And He said unto them, Know ye not this parable? And how, then, will ye know all parables? The sower soweth the Word." Mk.4:13-14. The Word of God will go forth, throughout the whole world, and as Christ said, that this Word will fall on various types of soil, which represents various types of individuals, some will accept and some will reject and be unfruitful.

4. The Parable of the Lamp (Mk.4:21-29; Matt.5:15-16; Lk.8:16-18; Lk.11:33-36.)

The illustration of the lamp represents the light which God has brought into the world and will shine throughout the whole world during the kingdom age. However there will be many who will try to cover over it, when it is taught throughout the world. The light of the Gospel will bring forth fruit, some to everlasting life, and some to everlasting judgement. In man's freedom of choice, God continues to allow all to make their individual choice as to whether they to live in the everlasting light of God, or choose to ignore the deeds of light and follow after the deeds of darkness.

5. The Parable of the Mustard Seed (Matt.13:31-32; Mk.4:30-34; Lk.13:18-19.)

The Lord is comparing the kingdom to come as to a "Mustard Seed", which is so small, yet it grows into the greatest of all of the herbs. The preaching of the gospel started out with a small beginning on the day of Pentecost, until the great kingdom age of righteousness. (Acts 1:15; Acts 2:41; 1 Cor.1:26.) The Gospel has been going forth for almost 2,000 years and when the saints of all ages put on their glorified bodies, and return with the Lord, there will be a mighty kingdom set up by the King of kings and Lord of lords. The whole earth will respond to the gospel of the kingdom. This does not mean that all will respond in favor of the righteousness of God, but all will individually have to accept or reject our kingdom teachings. However, there will be all sorts of cults and ism try to benefit by the by products of Christianity, claiming to be the authentic Christian teachings.

6. The Parable of the Tares among the Wheat (Matt.13:24-30)

The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man who sowed good seed in his field. God has been sowing His Word in this world. The enemy has sown tares among the wheat. So Satan has sown sin upon this earth which produce the ungodly. The servants of God asked the question, "Wilt thou, then, that we go and gather up the tares"? "Let both grow together until the harvest; and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn." Matt.13:30.

We learn from this parable that when the Lord comes to establish the kingdom, that the ungodly will be reaped and removed by death until the second resurrection, when they will stand before the Great White Throne, and then cast into the eternal lake of fire. (Rev.20:11-15.) The wheat will be put into the barn, and will be as the sheep that will enter into the Kingdom of righteousness. Note how the Lord explained this. "His disciples came unto Him, saying, Explain unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom, but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are the angels. As, therefore, the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this age. The Son of man shall send His angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and them who do iniquity, and shall cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear." Matt.13:36b-43.

This gives us a good illustration of how the angels will go throughout the whole world and gather the wicked and cast them into a furnace of fire, and the wailing and gnashing of teeth will be their souls crying out as they will go into sheol, awaiting the White Throne Judgement.

7. The Parable of the Drag Net which is cast into the Sea (Matt.13:47-50)

The kingdom of heaven is like a net that is cast into the sea (the world). The angels will come and separate the wicked from among the righteous, and cast them into the furnace of fire.

This will be accomplished after the battle of Armageddon, when the Lord cleanses the whole earth, separating the wicked from the righteous, as He begins His Kingdom of righteousness.

CHRIST SHALL RULE WITH A ROD OF IRON

May we beware of those false teachers who think that we can pull ourselves up out of a total depraved nature, by ourselves. We as Believers cannot bring in the kingdom, as Christ Himself must bring in a righteous reign by a "Rod of Iron". Our job as saints of God are to preach the Gospel, calling lost sinners out from the wrath to come. We are sent into the world to proclaim the new birth, preparing precious souls for that great "Air Lift", when Christ comes for His own. The true church, forming the body of Christ, and "Called Out" to be "Caught Up"! There will be a revival upon the earth after we ascend on high. They will have their eyes opened and have the name Jehovah written on their foreheads. They will be classified as "Tribulation Saints", saved "Out From" the final judgement to come, but "Caught In" the Abomination of Desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet and confirmed by Christ. (Dan.9:27; Matt.24:15.) If they die or live through the tribulation, they will be counted worthy to enter into the kingdom and avoid the baptism of fire.

The multitude of saints in their glorified bodies shall possess the whole world, proclaiming the Gospel of the kingdom of righteousness. With nature restored, and the earthly people being prolific, having large families, the earth will be replenished. However the offspring from the kingdom believers will have to make their choice as to whether they will repent and accept Christ as their personal savior. It will be our commission to go into the whole world during the thousand year kingdom and reach and teach the kingdom principles. Study carefully Isaiah chapter eleven for the various characteristics of the kingdom. With nature restored and Satan bound and cast into the bottomless pit, there will not be the spiritual wickedness to contend with during the kingdom age. The pattern of life will be changed, even within the animal world. Here are a few changes that will be made. These will be definite signs of distinction as to the kingdom age. When God makes changes, He makes them in no uncertain ways. Let us look at what changes will be made during the coming kingdom of righteousness.

- 1. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb. (Isa.11:6.)**
- 2. The leopard shall lie down with the kid. (Isa.11:6.)**
- 3. The calf and the young lion shall lie down together, and a little child shall lead them. (Isa.11:6)**
- 4. The cow and the bear shall feed their young ones and lie down together. (Isa.11:7)**
- 5. The lion shall eat straw like an ox. (Isa.11:7.)**
- 6. A little child shall not be harmed by an asp or by an adder. (Isa.11:8).**

7. **Nothing will be destroyed in the Holy Mountain of Christ's kingdom and all the earth will be filled with the knowledge of God's righteousness. (Isa.11:9).**
8. **As the remnant of Israel is being regathered into her land in our present day, so Christ will gather Israel to possess her land without being scattered again. (Isa.11:10-14.)**

PERFECT HEALTH WILL BE THE ORDER OF THE DAY

There are some Christian groups that believe that disease is of the devil, and those that are sick are possessed by demons. They think that all sicknesses and diseases can be dealt with by faith, and so the Great Physician will honor that faith, during our present time. They often will advise the sick to say that they are healed before they are healed, but such are confused as to the proper tense. If we say that we are healed from sickness before we are, we are lying. God can heal and He does heal in a supernatural way in our day, but many times He withholds such healing for various purposes. Most of the healing by God in our day is done among the unbelievers for a sign. May we be honest and accept that many fine believers can be troubled with infirmities in our day and age. Since they are believers and God the Holy Spirit dwells within them, He would never tolerate an indwelling demon in that same body which He possesses. What will our judgement be for the Apostle Paul, with his thorn in the flesh? How about Timothy with his weak stomach. What about Job, with the plight that he endured?

Christ dealt with the sin question at Calvary, and He paid the debt for every aspect of sin. So, when nature is restored, during the kingdom, then will all the physical ailments be fully dealt with. The Psalmist cried out, "Heal my soul; for I have sinned against thee". (Ps.41:4.) In this day and age the healing process is primarily for the soul, but the Lord does have exceptions in order to bring honor and glory to His name. Often part of the following verse is quoted, and leaving out the important part. "Bless the Lord O my soul, and forget not all His benefits, who forgiveth all my iniquities, who healeth all my diseases, who redeemeth thy life from destruction, who crowneth thee with loving-kindness and tender mercies," Ps.103:2-4. The emphasis is on the redemption of the soul, forgiving all of one's iniquities. The thought here is on the spiritual well being of the believer, rather than the physical. As the Lord did tremendous healing during His first earthly ministry, so He will provide the greatest of health during His earthly kingdom, when nature will be completely restored. When we clearly understand Isaiah chapter 53, we will be convinced by the Holy Spirit that this portion of God's Word goes far beyond the immediate time, but far into the future, with special emphasis on the Kingdom reign.

NATIONS WILL BE RULED IN PERFECT RIGHTEOUSNESS

In order for the Lord to rule in perfect righteousness during the thousand year reign, It will be necessary to use force, "And He shall rule them with a Rod of Iron; and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God." Rev.19:15b. You have other reference to this in the following Scriptures. (Ps.2:9; Rev.2:27; Rev.12:5.) With the billions of saints of all generations, this perfect righteousness will be displayed throughout the whole world. "But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity the meek of the earth; and

He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His waist." Isa.11:4-5. With the millions of saints in their glorified bodies, there will be no problem in keeping His perfect righteousness. The recorded sermons on the mount, and the beatitudes will be taught throughout the whole world. Violence and revolt will be suppressed during the kingdom of righteousness.

Let us enlarge a little more on the conditions which will exist during those thousand years of righteousness. Conditions in the whole world will improve greatly, under the jurisdictions of the Lord's ambassadors throughout the whole world. We do not know the methods of travel that we will be capable of doing in our glorified bodies, but we know that there will be swiftness and no misdemeanor will go unpunished. Both the Old Testament saints and the New Testament saints of all times will be sent forth by the Lord Himself. The whole world system will change, as Satan, who is the god of the present world system shall spend the entire thousand years dropping into the bottomless pit. This will require a complete change of policy from unrighteousness, to God's righteousness with the Eternal Son of God, ruling with that "Rod of Iron". When we look at the affairs in our present day politics, we can readily cry out as did Pilate, when he was under the pressure of the religious leaders of Israel. **"What is Truth?"** It will take Almighty God himself to straighten out the affairs of this world. Nature also being restored, will cause amazement throughout the realm of God. **"Then the moon shall be confounded and the sun ashamed, when the Lord of hosts shall reign in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before His ancients gloriously."** Isa.24:23. It is wonderful how God the Holy Spirit revealed to Isaiah these marvelous truths to be established upon Planet Earth. **"Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a Righteous Branch and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgement and justice in the earth. In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is His Name whereby He shall be called, The Lord Our Righteousness."** Jer.23:5-6.

During this kingdom reign of one thousand years, men will be without excuse as many will desire evil rather than good, for they will no longer be able to blame it on the environment or upon Satan and his demons.

For the fallen angels will all be cast into the bottomless pit for the duration of the thousand years, while Christ the Lord, reigns in righteousness, leading up to the eternal kingdom of righteousness. All of the earthly people will only have themselves to blame, if they choose wickedness rather than the righteousness of God. There will be billions of people born during the kingdom age and they will have to make their own decision as to whether they want darkness or God's eternal light. The choice will be theirs, for there is a way that seemeth right unto depraved man, but then thereof is the way of death. Christ will have to rule with a rod of iron and by His authority, we will go forth and proclaim the Gospel of the kingdom for a thousand years.

THE SAINTS SHALL RULE AND REIGN WITH THE LORD

There are several events that must take place before this marvelous kingdom of Righteousness can take place. May we briefly remind you of these various events, which will begin the count down for "Thy kingdom Come, Thy will be done, in earth as it is in heaven".

Matt.6:10. There will be no general resurrection, but there will be the resurrection of the saints of all ages.

1. The Rapture of the saints of all ages (Jn.14:1-6.)

Before we can rule and reign with the Lord Jesus Christ, we must have our glorified bodies. Christ has reminded us of this positional truth, which will some day become positive reality. **"I am glorified in them". Jn.17:10b.** We also read, **"Moreover, whom He did predestinate, them He also called: them He also justified, and whom He justified, them He also glorified." Rom.8:30.** This is wonderful positional truth which will be realized completely when the Rapture takes place. The process of receiving these glorified bodies will be glorious and wonderful! **"Behold, I show you a mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed." 1 Cor.15:51-52.** The Rapture will take place, when God the Father declares the zero moment when Christ leaves His home in glory to come in the clouds to receive the Old Testament saints as well as His bride to be. We will be led into gloryland by the Creator of all things. "In my Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself, that where I am, there ye may be also." Jn.14:2-3. Here are some important truths that we must consider.

2. We must take our place in the mansions of God the Father

Through the work of the Holy Spirit, who eternally dwells within us, who gave us our spiritual life, we have become members of the Royal family of God. During the complete tribulation upon Planet Earth, we as believers in heaven will come under the tutorship of heavenly beings in preparation for the Royal priesthood, during the millennium. It will be a seven year course in preparations for the kingdom of righteousness. We have ample opportunity to study kingdom principles now as well as learn more about Almighty God. There will be the most marvelous fellowship with the saints of all ages. Perhaps, it will be during this heavenly experience that we will be assigned the various places upon earth to teach the earthly people, the righteousness of God. "And hast made us unto our God kings (kingdom) and priests: and we shall reign on the earth". Rev.5:10.

The Lord has given us a tremendous privilege as Christians, with such a "Blessed Hope", "Joint Heirs", with the Lord, and blessed with all spiritual blessings in Christ Jesus. Listen what the Holy Spirit revealed to Peter. "But ye are a chosen generation, **a Royal Priesthood**, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvelous light: Which in time past were not a people, **but are now the people of God**; which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy." 1 Pet.2:9-10. The spiritual blessings in heavenly places are beyond our immediate understanding, but will completely be revealed, when we receive our glorified bodies. The more we understand the Bible now, the more confidence we will have before the Lord Jesus Christ. "To the end He may

establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ **with all His saints.**" 1 Thess.3:13.

As the Lord will bring us **out from** the wrath to come (1 Thess.1:10), there will be great preparations for our return to earth after the seven years, in our heavenly home. "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they **lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.**" Rev.20:4. This certainly should be sufficient evidence that there will be evangelism during the tribulation, and they shall rule with those who will be saved out from the tribulation and will rule and reign with Christ, along with the Old Testament saints all having been assigned by Christ along with those from this present age. They will have their part in the first resurrection, which will be completed at the end of the Millennium, in preparations for the New Heavens and the New earth. (Rev.21:1-27.) God's ways are marvelous and immutable and praise worthy.

When the Lord Jesus Christ comes to Rapture us home with a place prepared in His Father's mansions, we will be thrilled to behold the wonders of heaven, in the midst of billions of holy angels around the throne of God. This will be our first step toward the eternal Paradise of the new creation. During those seven years in the heavenlies, we will enjoy many thrills, rejoicing in the Lord. There will be no housing shortage in these mansions on high! We will have a great time comparing Biblical truths with the saints as well as the holy angels and it will be superb! We will get to know our ministering spirits and a little of the protection that they were responsible for, during our earthly pilgrimage. (ref. Heb.1:14.) The angelic heavenly choirs as well as the choirs from among the saints of all ages, will thrill our souls. Each of us will be given our new eternal name, based upon our faithfulness to the Lord during our earthly outreach for Him. Our most exciting moment will be when we see the Lord, "Face to Face"! (1 Jn.3:2.) If our works upon earth survive the cleansing fire of God, and we receive a special crown, what a privilege it will be to present it to the Lord, who alone is worthy of all praise and glory. "Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power; for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created." Rev.4:11.

3. The Old Testament and the New Testament saints must appear before the judgement seat of Christ.

Although our sins have all been paid for, past, present, and future, when Christ died on the cross, we nevertheless will have to come before the judgement seat of Christ, to be awarded according to our faithfulness. God being a just Father, desires to award our faithfulness to His Son during our earthly pilgrimage. We are of the Royal Family of God at this present time, and this special gathering around the judgement seat of Christ will have an effect of adding the brightness to our **gold, silver, and precious stones,** and eliminating the **wood, hay and stubble,** from our earthly service. "For we must all appear before the judgement seat of Christ, that everyone may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad." 2 Cor.5:10. Everyone must appear before the Lord for recognition for services rendered. "For other foundation can no man lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble-

Every man's work shall be made manifest; for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall test every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built upon it, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss; but he himself shall be saved, yet as by fire. Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? " 1 Cor.3:12-16. Our understanding of this truth is very important as to our future assignment. All the saints of God will receive their positions of honor for the coming kingdom, but some will be merely saved so as by fire and have nothing to present to the Lord as a thank you offering. Don't let that happen to you! Keep short accounts with the Lord, using first John chapter one and verse nine. Get rid of as much wood, hay, and stubble now, and exercise faithfulness to the Lord, while passing through this present life. Do all as unto the Lord, rather than unto self. Do all for the glory of God, rather than self glory or fame among men. It is very easy to be so critical in the service of the Lord that the blessings of God could become wood, hay or stubble and be burned at the judgement seat of Christ. " Some, indeed, preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will. The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds; But the other, of love, knowing that I am set for the defense of the gospel. What then? Notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretense or in truth, Christ is preached; and in that I do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice." Phil.1:15-18. The task and great commission is too great for us to spend our time, looking at each other! God has given us the challenge, to look unto the fields that are already white unto harvest!

4. The marriage of the Lamb must take place in the heavenlies

After the believers of this mystery age receive their glorified bodies, and stand before the judgement seat of Christ, great preparations will be made for the marriage of the Lord Jesus Christ to the New Testament saints. Preparations for the bride will be made in these mansions of the Father, and we will be presented to the Father by the Lord Himself. The marriage and the feast will be well attended, by both the angelic hosts and the Old Testament saints, who are the friends of the Bridegroom. "He that hath the bride is the bridegroom; but the friend of the bridegroom, who standeth and heareth Him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice; this my joy, therefore, is fulfilled." Jn.3:29. The New Testament saints, as the bride will be made ready in those beautiful mansions of the Father. "Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints." Rev.19:7-8. There will be a great celebration in heaven, with the most beautiful singing that we have ever heard. A glorious banquet will be made ready, becoming the greatest feast of all time. "Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb." Rev.19:9b. Sometime during this tremendous feasting, the Lord Jesus Christ will pause and a great silence will come among the billions. Christ will break the bread, reminding us of that broken body for the remission of our sins. When the Lord will take up the cup, it will be with exceeding great joy. Note what the Lord said when He instituted the Lord's supper. "And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the New Testament, which

is shed for many for the remission of sins. **But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom."** **Matt.26:26-29.** The Lord has been depriving himself of drinking the fruit of the vine for almost two thousand years, waiting for our arrival in heaven. That is outstanding love that Christ is manifesting to us, as the redeemed of all ages.

5. An Angelic Battle in the Heavens

There is no doubt in my mind, considering the Scriptures, that we will be aware of some evil forces presenting themselves under the sovereignty of God. A good example of this is the record that we have in the Book of Job. "Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came among them." Job.1:6. Under the sovereignty of God, nothing can be done without the permissive will of God. You may ask, just who are the sons of God? All of the angelic hosts are sons of God, but there is at present a division between the holy angels and the fallen angels, however, they are all creatures of God and will be dealt with accordingly. During our 7 years in heaven before the Millennium, our most important revelation will be to see our Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ. We will take great pride in preparing for the marriage and the wedding supper. (Rev.19:7-10.) We as the bride of Christ will be presented pure and clean and arrayed in the finest of linen. (Rev.19:8. We will get to meet all of the friends of the Bridegroom. All of this shall occur during the seven years in heaven, at God's own timing. Perhaps it will be after that final heavenly battle against Satan and his demons.

Sometime early in the beginning of our stay in heaven, there will be an important stirring among the holy angels, as Michael the archangel summons God's holy angels to prepare for a spiritual battle against Satan and his demons. We know the time that this battle will take place, according to the Scripture. It will be in the middle of the tribulation or after three and one half years. There are several events that point to this exact timing.

- 1. It was foretold by Isaiah, that Satan would fall from heaven. It also told the reasons why. (Isa.14:12-17.) This reveals the five I wills of Lucifer and God's five I wills of judgements.**
- 2. Daniel relates to the breaking of a Seven Year Covenant with Israel. (Dan. 9:27.)**
- 3. It will spark off the Abomination of Desolation upon the earth. (Dan.9:27; Matt.24:15.)**
- 4. The Jewish remnant will flee to the hills for the three and one half years, which is known as "time, and times, and half a time" (Rev.12:6, 14b.**
- 5. Elijah and Moses are assigned a thousand two hundred and three score days to bear witness upon the earth, during the tribulation. (Rev.11:3.**
- 6. The times of the Gentiles shall conclude at the end of forty and two months, which brings us to the close of the seven years of tribulation upon the earth. (Rev.11:2.)**

These are important references which are even counted out in months and days, declaring the exact time of this heavenly conflict. "And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels, and prevailed not, neither was there place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him." Rev.12:7-9. Since Satan has already usurped power upon the earth, making it his domain, now he will be able to intensify his battle against God, with all who follow Him. His main thrust will be upon the nation Israel through whom the Messiah entered as the Incarnate One. These will consist of the remnant of Israel. "And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman who brought forth the male child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent." Rev.12:13-14. This is why the Lord gave the warning to Israel to flee to the hills, "When ye, therefore, see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place (whosoever readeth, let him understand), then let them who are in Judea flee into the mountains;" Matt.24:15-16. Evidently, God is going to give those who are in or near the holy place (The temple) special care as they were told to stand, ready to be delivered from Satan. This following Scripture is of great interest. "And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman (Israel) who brought forth the male child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent." Rev. 11:13-14. It reminds one of Moses, when surrounded by water and hills and an on coming Egyptian army. Moses said, "Fear not, stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord which He will show unto you today;" Exod.14:13a.

We need to realize that the evil forces, under the sovereignty of God, must appear in heaven and give a report of their activities. The saints of all ages will be gathered into their heavenly Paradise, with a continual protection from the evil forces. As we are accused day and night before God by Satan, so this accusation will continue throughout the first half of our seven year stay in heaven. There are some misled believers who think that Satan is already thrown out of heaven, but this is not according to the Scriptures. If Satan has been thrown out of heaven at that time, then it would not be necessary for the believers to have an Advocate in heaven. All that we would need would be the continual prayer and intercession that God the Holy Spirit is making in our behalf. (Rom.8:26.) Praise God the great armies of the holy angels will be an ever present protection in heaven, and Satan and his army of demons will be limited to their sphere of activity.

As Satan and his army of demons are thrown out of heaven, they will descend upon Planet Earth where Satan will take over full control of the two beasts, with two added armies of demons. This heavenly battle against Satan by Michael the archangel, will start when the fifth trumpet sounds. "And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth; and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit, and there arose smoke out of the pit, like the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit." Rev.9:1-2. Following this smoke there will be an army of demons come forth to torment the subjects of the beast for five months continually. (Rev.9:3-10. These demons will have a five star general over them whose name is "Destroyer". (Rev.9:11.) This will no doubt be the beginning of the Abomination of

Desolation and will continue for three and one half years. The treaty that the beast will make with Israel will be broken, signs and wonders will be displayed before the people of the earth, and the beast and his image will be worshipped.

There will be another very large army of demons released from under the Euphrates river. "And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which is before God. Saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, Loose the four angels (fallen angels) who are bound in the great river, Euphrates. And the four angels were loosed, who were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, to slay the third part of men. "Rev.9:13-15. This will mean about one billion will be slain throughout the whole world. These four fallen angels each will have their army to travel throughout this world, destroying life. Their total number will be, two hundred million. (Rev.9:16. Strangely enough, those remaining will not repent from worshipping demons, idols, murdering and witchcraft. (Rev.9:20-21.)

There will be a great slaughter of men during the last half of the tribulation. Perhaps most of the 144,000 youth of Israel will be slain, as well as many Gentiles who become tribulation saints. However there will be many from Israel who will flee to the mountains, and receive God's special protection during the remainder of the tribulation. No doubt the ancient city of Petra will be the city of refuge during the abomination of desolation. God always manifests grace in every age. These of the remnant of Israel will then enter into the kingdom of a thousand years, and will become Kingdom subjects.

HEAVEN WILL BE CLEANSED FROM THE PRESENCE OF DEMONS

As Satan, that Devil will be cast out of heaven, 42 months after the Rapture, hell will break loose upon this earth. We have just reviewed a few of the terrible things to come, but praise God we will be in our heavenly home, and dwelling in the mansions of God. We probably will join in singing that great "Hallelujah Chorus". "And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ; for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, who accused them before our God, day and night." Rev.12:10. From here on, this earth will be the main target by Satan, as he makes his final stand against the righteousness of God. But praise God for the mighty power of the blood of Jesus Christ, "And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death." Rev.12:11. This will include the 144,000 youth of Israel, as they testify to the saving grace of our loving Lord. There will be many tribulation saints in spite of the drastic onslaught of the beasts, under the control of Satan. We of the Rapture will be safely kept, "Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them." Rev.12:12a. It will be a different outlook for those upon the earth during the Abomination of Desolation. "Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time." Rev.12:12b.

THY KINGDOM COME

As we conclude the study of our "Blessed Hope", may we be aware of the multitude of preparations that must be made before this kingdom of righteousness can occur. We have studied

the prophetic declarations brought forth by God the Holy Spirit, and may we diligently serve the Lord as we wait for that glorious kingdom to become a reality. When that Rapture takes place and all of these heavenly events are fulfilled then we can prepare ourselves to watch that great battle, when "The Son of God goes forth to war!" This will be our battle cry as we will leave the mansions of God the Father and return with the Lord to this present earth. It will be in fulfillment of what Enoch predicted thousands of years ago. "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him". Jude 14-15. Enoch mentioned innumerable saints coming with the Lord, when there weren't that many saints in his days. Praise God, all of the saints of past generations shall come with the Lord to set up this righteous kingdom. "To the end He may establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all His saints." 1 Thess.3:13. This will be another great moment in our lives.

The prayer which the Lord taught to His disciples will fully be appreciated under the powerful rule of the Lord Jesus Christ. (matt.6:9-13.) There will be tremendous revivals upon this earth during the millennium, but there will also be a great resistance to the Gospel of the Kingdom. This will be dealt with when the final battle is dealt with, after the kingdom age of one thousand years. "Thy kingdom come,Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth." Lk.11:2b.

THE LORD SHALL REIGN

Both the Old Testament saints and the New Testament saints from all ages have been looking forward to the time when God Himself will rule upon the earth. This will be a special time in God's great plan to teach mankind, personally, the righteousness of God. When the Lord reigns, the whole world system must change. At this present time, the god of this world system has stolen from God, the authority upon this earth. Nevertheless, Satan is under the sovereignty of God. Yes, he has power even to brain wash every human being coming into this world, but praise God, the gospel is the power of God unto salvation. (Rom.1:16.) Praise God, that during the kingdom age, Satan and his fallen angels will be tied up and descending in the bottomless pit for the duration of the thousand years. (Rev.20:1-3.) The greatest obstacle, during the kingdom age will be the total depravity of man. Even with the most favorable conditions that earthly man will enjoy, during the kingdom age, that imputed sin nature will often rebel against God's righteous judgements. The Lord will demand a complete change in policy, from their inbred unrighteousness to the perfect righteousness of God. Christ's rod of iron shall be the determining authority. There will be no excuse whatsoever that the earthly people will have,in not accepting the beatitudes and righteous principles which the Lord taught during His earthly ministry.

We often repeat, "Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven." Matt.6:10. But under the present circumstances, it seems that this is impossible, and rightly so. But praise God, when the time comes, that kingdom of righteousness shall be established, not only for the thousand years but on into eternity. "The kingdom of this world is become the

kingdom of our Lord, and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever." Rev.11:15b. King David was promised that he would never lack for a son to sit upon his throne and that it would be forever. "And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established forever before thee; thy throne shall be established forever" 2 Sam.7:16.

Although the kingdom of righteousness, as promised, would exist for one thousand years, this will precede the final battle of the evil forces against Almighty God. We discuss this in chapter six, but I merely want to mention that the total sin question has been dealt with at the cross and will never have to be a future issue, when God creates the New Heaven and the New Earth. I will constantly remind you of the key verse in the whole Bible is Daniel 9:24; when everlasting righteousness will exist throughout all the creation of God. Yes, God is preparing and planning for an eternal new order, when all sin shall be removed forever from God's New Creation.

This is God's ultimate aim, and eternal plan. That human body which was first formed like unto man and God the eternal Son stepped into it and became tempted in all points like we, yet without sin, became the means through which we have been brought back to God. We have been purchased out of the slave market of sin, by the precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. God has paid the entire debt of sin as both Sacrificer and sacrifice. While we were dead in sin, Christ came into this earth, laying aside His royal garments and became sin for us. His humility, doing the will of God the Father has earned Him that supreme position as, "And His name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David.....and to establish it....forever..... Isa.9:6-7.

JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD SHALL REIGN

**Jesus shall reign where-e'r the sun does His successive journey's run,
His kingdom spread from shore to shore, till moons shall wax and wane no more**

**From north to south the princes meet, to pay their homage at His feet,
While western empires own their Lord and savage tribes attend His Word,**

**To Him shall endless prayer be made and endless praises crown His head
His name like sweet perfume shall rise with every morning sacrifice.**

**People and realms of every tongue dwell on His love with sweetest song,
And infant voices shall proclaim their early blessings on His Name.**

THE SAINTS SHALL RULE AND REIGN WITH THE LORD

The capitol of the world will be Jerusalem and the saints of all ages shall be commissioned and sent through out the whole world, as ambassadors of the King of kings and Lord of lords. We will teach the Word of God tirelessly in our glorified bodies. "And we shall reign on the earth" Rev.5:10b. The appearance of the Eternal Son of God during the Old Testament days at various times is of great importance. The most significant appearance was Melchizedek as both

king and high priest at a place called Salem, was there to meet Abraham. This Friend of God called Abraham with his 300 men were fed by Melchizedek as they returned from battle. "And Melchizedek, king of Salem, brought forth bread and wine; and he was the priest of the Most High God. And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the Most High God, possessor of heaven and earth:" Gen.14:18-19. "So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest, but He that said unto Him, Thou art My Son, today have I begotten thee. As He said also in another place, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek;" Heb.5:5-6. "For this Melchizedek, king of Salem, priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him. To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being, by interpretation, King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of Peace; Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like unto The Son of God, abideth a priest continually." Heb.7:1-3. Only the Triune God can meet such qualifications, and this must refer directly to the Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord is the Creator of all things and is the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end, and The ancient of Days.

May we turn your attention over to the prophetic revelation that Daniel was given, concerning the tribulation war against the saints by the beast. "I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them," Dan.7:21. To further explain this we read, "Thus he said, the fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces." Dan.7:23. This will take place during the great tribulation, after Satan is thrown out of heaven, and in his anger he will slay many of the tribulation saints, especially among the 144,000 of the tribes of Israel. This will be when the beast breaks the 7 year covenant with Israel under the power of Satan, and some will flee to the hills prepared for them, and others will be slain as they will witness for the Lord. This will continue, "Until The Ancient of Days came and judgement was given to the saints of The Most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. From this and other Scriptures we understand that when the Kingdom of Righteousness is set up by Christ, all the resurrected saints from the Rapture and all through the tribulation will reign with the Lord during the thousand years. There will be billions of saints of all times sent forth to the ends of the earth to every tribe and nation, proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom. That will be a glorious day when we receive our glorified bodies and bring praise and glory to our Lord Jesus Christ. We have been given to Christ by God the Father. "I pray for them; I pray not for the world, but for them whom thou hast given me; for they are thine. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them." Jn.17:9-10. Our glorification is in Christ Jesus. "Moreover, whom He did predestinate, them He also called; and whom He called, them He also justified; and whom He justified, them He also glorified." Rom.8:30. That glorification will be upon all the saints who will rule and reign with Christ during the kingdom age. God the Father's goal is to culminate time by making His Eternal Son supreme over all! "Who is the image of the Invisible God, the first-born of all creation; For by Him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers - all things were created by Him, and for Him; And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist. And He is the head of the body, the church; who is the beginning, the first - born from the dead, that in all things He might have the pre-eminence. For it pleased the Father

that in Him should all fullness dwell." Col.1:15-19. We are privileged generations from Pentecost until the Rapture, to be members of the body of Christ, and one day to become the Bride of Christ. We have already become partakers of the inheritance of the saints of light.(Col.1:12.) "Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us unto the kingdom of His dear Son; In whom we have redemption through His blood, even the forgiveness of sins;" Col.1:13-14. When the time comes for the kingdom of righteousness upon this earth, we will be fully equipped to proclaim the unsearchable riches of Christ Jesus during the kingdom age.

As we conclude this important subject of the coming kingdom of righteousness, may we continue to search out the Scriptures and become established in God's working power. The kingdom teachings of the Lord Jesus Christ during His earthly ministry are very important for our daily living, and also are a must for the kingdom age. God's high ideals from Genesis to the Book of Revelation must be thoroughly studied, "...to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth." 2 Tim.2:15. As we prepare for the coming kingdom, we need knowledge from the whole Bible. "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works." 2 Tim.3:16-17. In this brief study, we have merely touched a very small portion on the kingdom principles. Let us allow God the Holy Spirit to establish us in the righteousness of God. "For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present age, looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the Great God and our Savior Jesus Christ, who gave Himself for us that He might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto Himself a people of His own, zealous of good works." Titus 2:11-14.

Mankind has lived almost six thousand years upon "Planet Earth", under various conditions. God has made possible under every age to show mankind His everlasting love toward them, His eternal provision for them and His consequences to them if they did not take heed. Totally depraved man is without excuse before God and that individual choice must be made by them or suffer the wrath of God poured out upon them for eternity. The Bible clearly sets forth God's way and God the Holy Spirit is our ever present help when we receive the new birth, making possible for us to do God's will. "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God." Rom.12:1-2.

By faith we repeat that wonderful prayer that Christ taught His disciples. "After this manner, therefore, pray ye; Our Father, who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen." Matt.6:9-13. That will be a glorious day when sin shall be no more and the eternal righteousness of God reigns over all! May we as the saints of God be totally dedicated to the Lord, and seeking to do His will. May we witness to the lost and dying, telling them of the saving grace of our Loving Lord. "Now unto Him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you

faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy, to the only wise God, our Savior, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen." Jude 24-25.

CONCLUSION

The "Kingdom of Righteousness" will be established, which will become the last and final test that mankind will be exposed to, before his final judgement. This is not the eternal kingdom, for the subjects will still have their "Totally Depraved" bodies. God will restore the earth to the most productive order and there will be no poverty, sicknesses, diseases, and people will live hundreds of years during this Millennium to come. The kingdom subjects will be prolific and the whole world will become populated, after that terrible Great Tribulation, where billions were slain. Mankind will have no excuse whatsoever, and they will certainly not be able to blame anything on Satan or the demons, for they will be locked up in the bottomless pit for the duration of the Millennium. God has been putting mankind into these various phases or ages for the primary purpose of testing their reaction. Not that He needed to find out, but that all of mankind would realize that apart from the undertaking of God, by grace, social reform or any self effort would all be in vain.

As we are teaching in this series of lessons, concerning the conflict between Satan and God, this test of the kingdom of righteousness is of great importance. Always remember that God has given both the angels and mankind the free of choice, which we call volition. When the Rapture takes place, the great tribulation will see one of the greatest revivals upon the face of the earth. There will be the 144,000 Jewish youth who will become God's witnesses, others of the Jews and perhaps some Gentiles will flee to the hills, as mentioned before, and there will be a great revival among the Gentiles, so great that they will not be able to be numbered. Then there will be Moses and Elijah as well as the angel with the everlasting Gospel. (Rev.7:4-14; Rev.14:6; Rev.11:3-13.) "After this I beheld and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations and kindreds, and peoples, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands.....Who are these arrayed in white robes? And from where did they come? And I said unto him, sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they who came out of the Great Tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb." Rev.7:9-14. Yes, there will be a great revival after the Rapture, and the beasts and the government under Satan will loose no time in rounding them up and killing them. These will have a part in the first resurrection, and that is why John in his preview of the great tribulation will see them in their heavenly realm.

Finally as we draw to a close this summary, The Lord will return to earth to set up His kingdom of righteousness, bringing man under his final test, before the final battle and then "The Great White Throne Judgement". God who is immutable will bring this to pass and no alterations will be necessary. "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them.....and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished." Rev.20:4-5a.

This kingdom of righteousness will be established, and the Lord Himself will rule with that "Rod of Iron". Yes, there will be those born during that kingdom age who will use their freedom of choice to their own downfall. It will be our business as glorified saints to teach and reach to the ends of the world, God's perfect righteousness. We as students of the Bible, have

a great advantage as we study the deep truths of God's Word. We will be better prepared for the kingdom age to have important responsibilities during the kingdom age. As I have said before, it is not the final stage of the eternal kingdom of righteousness, but it is the final age of the teaching of God's righteousness, before the kingdoms of this world become the eternal kingdom of God, where sin and immorality will never occur again. Praise God for the best is yet to come, and is fully prepared and provided by Almighty God, and by the grace of God, through the Lord Jesus Christ.

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER FIVE

1. Write briefly concerning the coming of the Lord for His saints and with his saints.
2. Write briefly on John 14:1-6; Mark 14:53-65; Matthew 26:57-68.
3. When will Israel's final 70th. week start as spoken of by the prophet Daniel?
4. Who all will be raised from the grave and changed according to 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18?
5. Write briefly on this subject, "God's Chosen Messianic Lineage".
6. Can we set a date as to when the coming of the Lord to Rapture home the saints, will take place? Please quote Scripture.
7. Give the heavenly events that will follow the Rapture of the saints. Please give Scripture.
8. Name six things that will happen on the earth during the Great Tribulation. Give Scripture also.
9. Write an essay on , "The Battle of Armageddon". Use Scripture.
10. During the thousand years of the kingdom of Righteousness, where will Satan be? Give Scripture.
11. Why will the Temple have to be cleansed at the beginning of the Thousand year reign of Christ? Give Scripture.
12. What changes can you name which will take place during the kingdom? Give Scripture.
13. When will Matthew 25:31-46 be fulfilled?
14. Give some Scriptures relating to the prophetic aspects of the Kingdom of Righteousness.
15. What will the saints of all ages be doing with their Lord during the Kingdom of Righteousness? Scripture please.
16. Write a brief essay on Isaiah 9:6-7.

17. What will some of the conditions be, before the Kingdom of Righteousness is established? Give Scripture.
18. After the Rapture takes place and we spend time in the Mansions of God, will we know when the Messiah , His angelic army, and all of the saints will return to earth to set up His Kingdom? Give your reasons for your answer.
19. What are some of the preparations for the Kingdom leadership? Give Scripture.
20. Give as many characteristics as possible that we will find during the Kingdom reign upon earth during the thousand years.
21. What will be the work of the saints of all ages, during the duration of the Kingdom of Righteousness? Scripture please.
22. Explain Matthew 5:15-16; Mark 4:21-29.
23. Explain Matthew 13:1-17.
24. Explain Matthew 25:14-30.
25. What do you understand about the Parable of the Mustard Seed? Matthew 13:31-32; Mark 4:30-34.
26. Why is it necessary for Christ to rule with a "Rod of Iron, during the Kingdom age?
27. Explain Isaiah 24:23; and Jeremiah 23:5-6.
28. Explain Revelation 9:1-11; and Revelation 12:7-17.
29. Since God has given both the angels and human beings the freedom of choice, why is God just in declaring eternal judgement upon those who are choosing against God?
30. Write an essay on, "The Importance of the Cross of Calvary"
31. What will God finally prove when totally depraved mankind is placed under the kingdom of righteousness of Christ?
32. Write an essay on the conclusion that we finally must realize, as to "The Necessity of the Battle of Armageddon".

CHAPTER SIX



THE FINAL BATTLE AGAINST GOD

CHAPTER SIX

THE FINAL BATTLE AGAINST GOD

INTRODUCTION

For one thousand years this present world will be ruled in "Absolute Perfect Righteousness". This truth from the Bible is beyond any comprehension or imagination that may occur to us. May I further say, that the God of all creation will be the Ruler for the duration of the thousand year reign. God, being the Creator of Planet Earth, should have no difficulties in governing this world in His sovereignty, but there are two particular circumstances which exists and they are- the freedom of choice given by God and the total depravity of man.

1. "The Freedom of Choice" granted to "Homo Sapien"

Since God wasn't willing to merely create robots or puppets, but wanted intelligent creatures to use the brains that He would give to them in their choice of right, rather than wrong. God knew that this would create a problem, but was willing to give both the angels and mankind the freedom of choice. In order for God to have honorable fellowship with His creatures, He both gave them wonderful brain capacity and as well as the freedom to make their own choice. Had God not allowed such a choice, He would either have the possibility of evil forces to deal with, or suppress all His creation into dictatorial conditions. God did not intend to have a continual possibility with evil and so decided to deal with it, by allowing the choice of good or evil, until the evil forces could be dealt with and eventually eliminated completely. This latter method is what God has adopted and has fully judged all evil forces at the cross and is eventually going to carry out its sentence of annihilation. Satan and all of his demons are busy contending with God over this issue and they are determined to withstand God throughout His plans. God being sovereign has already defeated Satan at the cross and it is a matter of time when the sum total of sin will be cast forever into the lake of fire. This is an important study for the students of the Bible, for we must allow God the Holy Spirit to empower us to overcome these temptations with which we are faced. We have inherited the total depravity from the first man Adam and now we need the total delivery through the second man Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ.

God's aim and plan has been established and never will have to be altered. God is the same, yesterday, today and forever, to His praise, honor and glory! God is victorious in every phase of life and will bring to pass what He has planned in the past! God's ways are past finding out from the human viewpoint and must be discovered as revealed by God the Holy Spirit. The Word of God helps us to understand the Divine viewpoint. Let us now discover why the arm of flesh is weak and totally dependent upon God the Holy Spirit for understanding that marvelous plan of God.

2. The "Total Depravity of Man"

As human beings and the subjects of the earth, we are not puppets or robots but with the freedom of choice. Through the help of the Holy Spirit, we are able to suppress the old nature which is totally depraved. These creatures of choice have already been imputed with a sin nature, inherited from the first Adam. Adam and Eve had everything that one could wish for, but came under condemnation because they listened to the deception of Satan in the garden of Eden. Sin has reigned down through all these generations. But God has been calling individuals to accept the remission of sins through the sacrifice of His Eternal Son of God, who became the sin bearer in their stead. Christ became the second Adam, who was sent by God the Father to pay the price by death for our sins. Christ came to purchase us out of the slave market of sin with His own precious blood. Having paid the debt of our sin, has made it possible for those who believe to have newness of life and joint heirs in the Royal family of God. When one chooses "God's Way", here are but a few things that become ours.

CITIZENS IN THE HEAVENLIES

MEMBERS OF THE ROYAL FAMILY OF GOD

- 1. Adopted into God's family by being born of the Holy Spirit.
(Jn.3:6-8.)**
- 2. Eternally indwelt by God the Holy Spirit. (Jn.14:16-17.)**
- 3. All heavenly blessings in Christ Jesus. (Eph.1:3-14.)**
- 4. New heavenly citizenship. (Phil.1:27; Phil.3:20.)**
- 5. Believers become strangers and pilgrims in this world.
(Heb.11:13.)**
- 6. Sojourners and Pilgrims, waiting to be called home to gloryland.
(1 Pet.2:11.)**
- 7. Believers become a new creatures in Christ Jesus. (2 Cor. 5:17.)**
- 8. A new name is given to each and it is written down in heaven.
(Rev.3:12.)**
- 9. Believers have a new song to be sung when we are raptured home to gloryland.
(Rev.5:9.)**
- 10. Believers receive a new and better living way of life. (Heb.10:20.)**

- 11. Believers become saints as new creatures. (Col.3:10; Eph.4:24.)**
- 12. They receive a new commandment to love one another. (Jn.13:34.)**
- 13. Believers are made righteous in Christ Jesus. (Phil.3:9.)**
- 14. Believers become a kingdom of priests to reign with Christ during the kingdom age of one thousand years. (Rev.5:10.)**
- 15. Believers have a new manner of life through the gospel of Christ. (2 Pet.1:3; 2 Tim.3:10; Col.3:3; Gal.2:20.)**
- 16. Believer's walk is in the Holy Spirit. (Gal.5:16.)**
- 17. Believers leading and guidance is by the Holy Spirit. (Acts 22:11.)**
- 18. Believers become those sent as God's ambassadors to the people of the world. (Jn.17:16-18; 2 Cor.5:20.)**
- 19. Believers from Pentecost until the Rapture are the future bride of Christ. (Rev.19:7-8.)**

Because God gave man a choice, we can rejoice in what inheritance one has when making the right choice, and doing God's thing, rather than one's own thing. Yes, we still have that totally depraved nature with us, as believers, but we now have the power of the Holy Spirit within us to overcome temptations and the old form of life. "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4.

We have a marvelous future ahead of us, as Christians, and when that Rapture occurs, we will not only have the continuation of God the Holy Spirit within us, but we will have that eternal glorified body that will be delivered from the presence of sin forever! God's authority will continue to be established through our lives, during the Millennium. God will enable us to point many earthly people to the righteousness of God during those thousand years. The earthly people will not be deceived by Satan and his fallen angels during this reign of righteousness. They will have the most perfect surroundings during the kingdom age, and their only obstacle will be their totally depraved nature.

As we have already studied, we are reminded that Satan will be in prison during those thousand years of righteousness. He and his fallen angels will not be present during the kingdom of righteousness, but will be imprisoned in the bottomless pit for the duration of the thousand years. Although all of nature will be restored during the kingdom age, mankind will still be totally depraved and will have to make an individual choice, and will be without an excuse, under perfect conditions. One would think that the whole world would rush to serve the Lord and to please Him during His reign upon this earth. But on the contrary, many will resent the rule of righteousness being taught for they shall be lovers of darkness rather than light. The workers of iniquity will be under a terrible strain during the kingdom of righteousness and will

have to face the righteous teachings of the saints of God of all ages. Christ, with the rod of iron and complete authority will demand obedience during the entire thousand years.

The Saints of all ages, in their glorified bodies, will be sent throughout the whole world, during this thousand year reign. We will be a kingdom of priest, with Biblical knowledge, having had seven years preparation in the heavenly Paradise, and given the task of teaching the kingdom principles throughout the whole world. We will have the protection of Christ reigning from Jerusalem as the King of kings and Lord of lords. We will have passed from death unto life and entered into our eternal estate. There will be no casualties among the saints, but there will exist a great resentment among the earthly people, who are prone to evil, being lovers of darkness. These facts are necessary, as we study the final battle of Satan and his demons against Almighty God. Regardless of the response, the teaching of the kingdom of righteousness shall continue for the complete thousand years. "And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them; and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and who had not worshiped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived with Christ a thousand years." Rev.20:4. To conclude my introductory remarks, may I remind you from the Word of God, that during those thousand years, Satan will be in prison and unable to deceive the nations, during the entire thousand year reign of Christ. "And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after that he must be loosed a little season." Rev.20:1-3. During that little season, after the thousand years, the Lord Jesus Christ will still be reigning in righteousness, but the conditions will change.

A. SATAN WILL BE LOOSED FROM THE BOTTOMLESS PIT

The Lord Jesus Christ will still be reigning after the thousand year period, but now Satan is loosed for a little season. How long that will be, we do not know, but it will be long enough for the Devil and his demons to penetrate throughout the whole world with a terrific scheme of rebellion. Those who will be resenting the righteousness of God and desire their depraved nature to be activated, will be easy prey for Satan and his fallen angels. We as a kingdom of priests will have all sorts of opposition from those who love darkness rather than the light of the glorious Gospel of the kingdom. There will be clashes with the kingdom saints, as well as with the saints of all ages. It will finally result in our having to return to Jerusalem, either out of necessity, or with orders from the Lord Jesus Christ. This will cause a great upset in the ruling power throughout the world. There will be a great number of coups that will take place around the whole world. We must remember that although Lucifer was dethroned as the anointed Cherub, after iniquity was found in him, he still had tremendous power. He had all of the following attributes, according to Ezekiel 28:11-15.

1. Full of the sum total of wisdom

2. **A Perfect beauty, enlightening his personality.**
3. **He had access to the Garden of Eden.**
4. **He was enhanced with the most precious stones.**
5. **He had the beauty of music perhaps with a private orchestra of timbrels and flutes.**
6. **He had power to persuade one angel out of every three angels of God to follow him. (Rev.12:3-4.)**

Make no mistake about the power that Satan had, that even Michael the archangel could not bring accusation against him. "Yet Michael, the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee." Jude 9. So Satan will use all the power available under the sovereignty of God to maintain his kingdom on earth, as the god of this evil world system. He is a constant resistance to the plans of God.

Our world system today is a world wide Sodom and Gomorrah, under the powerful hand of Satan and his billions of demons. He even contends for this domain before God, as we have recorded in Job.1:6; Job 2:1. This is a clear example of Satan accusing Job as we also have him accusing the brethren day and night. (Rev.12:9-10.) Praise God, we have an Advocate with the God the Father, the Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Jn.2:1-2.) We have real evidence as of today, what Satan is capable of doing. It will be no difficult task for Satan to muster together resentful kingdom beings, who will be ready to fight against God. This will occur because they are totally depraved and also being brainwashed by Satan. (2 Cor.4:4.) May we now consider this great deception which the devil will present to the nations of the world, after a thousand year reign in righteousness, by the Lord Jesus Christ.

B. SATAN'S DECEPTION AMONG THE NATIONS

After a thousand years of perfect conditions, with no poverty, and food for all, and no war upon the whole face of the earth, you would say, it is impossible for a change with such marvelous conditions and there would be no reason for a revolt. But this will not be the case, according to God's Word. We must always remember that with the total depravity of man, he resents the holiness of God and wants to do his own thing, regardless of whether it is right or wrong. From the very beginning of time, man has wanted to make a name for himself, apart from God. The wickedness of mankind before the flood as well as after the flood, we have the tower of Babel as an example of the continuation of the total depravity of mankind apart from God. However, one would not expect rebellion under the conditions that will exist during the Millennium, but on the contrary, we are told in the Bible that with the great power of deception of Satan, men will become slaves to the command of the Evil One. The kingdoms of this world are under the influence of Satan and his fallen angels, and I see no reason why Satan will change his mind after he is released from the bottomless pit. It is his desire to have a complete one world government, controlling the political realm as well as the religious realm. Satan has

always had an easy prey with depraved man, and will have no problem deceiving "as the sands of the sea" the rebellious children, born during the Millennium.

Our attention goes back to the Psalmist, as we read, "Why do the nations rage, and the peoples imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He who sitteth in the heavens shall laugh; the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall He speak unto them in His wrath, and vex them in His great displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: The Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee.

Ask of me, and I shall give thee the nations for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel. Be wise now, therefore, O ye kings; be instructed, ye judges of the earth. Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest He be angry, and ye perish from the way, when His wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they who put their trust in Him." Ps.2:1-12. This has been the conditions under which God will be separating the children of darkness from the children of light, down through the ages. However, after one thousand years of a perfect government, under the most favorable circumstances, there will be millions as the sands of the sea, who will be ready to revolt.

In spite of those years under perfect rule, where there will be no misruling nor oppression, and justice will be for all, there will be many who will resent Christ's perfect government. It has been foretold, "But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth; and He shall smite the earth with a rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked." Isa.11:4. This tells us that there will be wickedness that will be dealt with during the Millennium, but will be judged immediately. The children of darkness will resent Christ's justice and will be ready to revolt under a powerful leader. That will take place when the following Scripture is fulfilled. "And when the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle; the number of whom is as the sand of the sea." Rev.20:7-8. This will take place at the conclusion of the thousand years and Satan will make his final effort in leading perhaps millions of disgruntled ungodly people to their death as they attempt their invasion of Jerusalem, the world's capital. Please note two definite names which are mentioned in Ezekiel chapter 38 and 39. There will be a terrible slaughter from among the Russian people, prior to the establishment of Christ's Kingdom of Righteousness, and here again, they will be easy prey for Satan to attempt another battle against God. Gog the prince of Russia and Magog the land of the prince. Since they disregard the teaching of the Bible, they will be ready to join the devil and his demons to overthrow the rule of Christ, if that were possible. "For a nation is come up upon my land" Joel 1:6a. We know what the results will be when the many nations under Russia march down upon the promised land of Israel. This will be repeated again after the Millennium, they will attempt the same thing, but this time, all the nations of the world will gather together under the power of Satan and his demons.

This will be the final attempt from both the wicked nations and the source of all wickedness. With the freedom of choice granted to both the angels and to mankind, God will rightfully reward those who stand true to Him and judge those that wish to do their own thing, and rebel

against God. Regardless of the length of time, "A Little Season" may be, we know from the Scripture that Satan and his billions of demons will accomplish their task of gathering the ungodly "As the Sands of the Sea". Satan and his demons have ample experience in deceiving mankind, which is totally depraved.

The march of this great army from all nations will zero in on Jerusalem, where the Lord Jesus Christ will be reigning in righteousness. No doubt all of the saints of God will be called to Jerusalem in time to be encamped around the world's capital. There will no doubt be total coups throughout the whole world simultaneously, and taken over by the ungodly. It may take sometime to manufacture nuclear weapons, special transport, sufficient ships and planes to carry the innumerable troops to the scene of battle. Evidently, they will have no interference and will gather according to Satan's schedule. The devil will be in complete charge as the master mind of the whole undertaking. He has been effective in the past in disturbing the whole world, and will do it again. He has declared himself the god of this world system, "Yet thou shalt be brought down to sheol, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man who made the earth to tremble, who did shake kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness, and destroyed its cities, and opened not the house of his prisoners." Isa.14:15-17. Satan is powerful and will convince the nations as he deceives them and sends them into total destruction. Satan has to be aware of God's plan as written in the Bible, but is trying every way possible to defeat God's purpose through the weakness of mankind. God in His sovereignty will only allow Satan to go so far and no further! However in this last stand that Satan will be making, God is allowing him plenty of freedom in gathering the nations, so that all the ungodly may be destroyed under a single judgement of Almighty God. We as the saints will behold the mighty force of God, as the heavens open and the wrath of God is poured out upon all the evil forces. "But the Lord is my defence, and my God is the rock of my refuge. He shall bring upon them their own iniquity, and shall cut them off in their own wickedness;" Ps.94:22-23a. That will be a glorious day when we behold the mighty power manifested against all evil! May we not faint along the way, as we press forward, fulfilling that great commission to Go tell!

C. SATAN'S KINGDOM WILL BE DESTROYED FOREVER

When these armies march toward Jerusalem and all of the surrounding territory is taken over by the ungodly, being led by Satan, there will be great anxiety in and around Jerusalem. No doubt many kingdom saints will be slain during these preparations, or enroute to Jerusalem. The devil will think that he is accomplishing great odds against God as he approaches Jerusalem to make his encounter with the Lord Jesus Christ. We who will be encamped about Jerusalem will experience a similar encounter like Israel had at the red sea, when the Egyptians were closing in on them. Knowing what God was about to do, we will be able to adjust ourselves to the situation and ".....Fear not, stand still, and see the salvation of the Lord which He will show unto you today:" Exod.14:13a. As we study the Scriptures, we are made aware of our continual care by our Sovereign God, and the work which He has entrusted us to accomplish. We have God's assurance that Satan's kingdom of darkness will be destroyed forever and we have great confidence in God's Word, which is alive and powerful. "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away" Matt.24:35. Our confidence in Almighty God is

established through a thorough knowledge of God's plans as set forth in the Bible. Let us preview what will happen when the thousand years are over and Satan is loosed for a season.

JERUSALEM BESIEGED

The armies of the world will be gathered together in unity with the devil, who will be in command. His billions of demons who have been promised victory will lead the attack against the legions of God's holy angels. No doubt Michael the archangel will be in command as they establish a spiritual array with the hosts of holy angels. "And when the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle; the number of whom is as "the sand of the sea". And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city:" Rev.2-:7-9a. This will be the greatest force ever gathered against the saints of God, with the attempt to slay the Eternal Son of God, who has been ruling in Jerusalem with a rod of iron for one thousand years. I am sure that Almighty God will allow them to be deluded, thinking that they can capture Christ and help Satan to take over the world affairs, offering to their leaders great fields of power. This will be no great task for Satan to accomplish, for he has done it down through the ages, brainwashing his clients.

As with the second advent of Christ, we read, "For the mystery of iniquity doth already work; only He who now hindereth will continue to hinder until He be taken out of the way. And then shall that wicked one be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of His coming, even him whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish, because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all might be judged who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness." 2 Thess.2:7-12.

As Satan and his billions of demons plus tens of thousands of soldiers from around the world entrench themselves around Jerusalem, they will be so deluded that they will think that they already have the victory. It will be one of the greatest arrays of fighting power that this world has ever seen. Satan with his tremendous power will attempt his last great stand against his Creator. He will attempt to regain control of the whole world, by taking Jerusalem and destroying the "Incarnate One", who is the Eternal Son of God, even the Lord Jesus Christ. Satan has had freedom of choice from the very beginning of his creation, and is self confident that he will be able to break the hold that God has on him. There will be no action coming out of Jerusalem, and we as the saints of God will watch and wait. Suddenly, the sky will brighten, and the consuming fire from God will with one stroke come down from heaven and burn to death the armies of the world. "And fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them." Rev.20:9b. Of course Satan and his armies of demons will try to escape when this happens, but all will be in vain. "And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever." Rev.20:9b-10. Satan with all the demons, the beast and the false prophet will

spend eternity being tormented in disgrace and never to escape the wrath of God. They will experience an everlasting living death under severe torment, never to escape the wrath of God.

The evil spirits or fallen angels will be separated from the kingdom of righteousness and remain in God's prison forever, and will be sealed off somewhere in outer space, never to escape. Those whom God had placed in chains of darkness, shall also be cast into the lake of fire. "And the angels who kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, He hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgement of the great day."

Jude 6. This "Great Day" refers to the judgement of all the fallen angels or demons. They all will be cast into the lake of fire forever, never able to cast their spell upon God's new creation. These fallen angels in chains of darkness will spend all eternity in the lake of fire, "For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement;" 2 Pet.2:4. Why should God spare ungodliness of any generation. The Lord will one day make that final separation of the righteous from the unrighteous of both the angelic hosts as well as mankind. "The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished;" 2 Pet.2:9. Until all this happens, we continue to be God's witnesses to His saving grace. We are looking forward to the Rapture, and our wonderful seven years in the heavenlies, while the tribulation continues upon this earth. Then that great day, when the heavens open and we descend with Christ, to observe that battle of Armageddon. We will assist the Lord in judgements upon this earth during the thousand year reign of righteousness, as well as the final judgements against Satan and his demons.

THE SAINTS SHALL ASSIST THE LORD IN JUDGEMENTS

As we will be a kingdom of priests during the Millennium, so we shall assist the Lord in judging both the fallen angels as well as the ungodly of all ages. "Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? And if the world shall be judged by you, are you unworthy to judge the smallest matters? Know ye not that we shall judge angels? How much more things that pertain to this life?" 1 Cor.6:2-3. The judgement of the fallen angels will take place as Satan is entirely defeated and he and his fallen angels are cast into the lake of fire. The judgement of the ungodly from the whole world will take place at "The Great White Throne Judgement". We will have plenty of experience, during the thousand year reign of Christ, which will prepare us for the final "Great Day". God expects us to be students of the Bible, and regardless of age or accomplishments, we need to constantly study God's Word, in preparation for the kingdom age, which will go on into eternity when time shall be no more. May we "Look Up" for our deliverance is drawing near, but also "Look Out" for the fields are white unto harvest!

The Triune God is mindful of the great part that the human race has been able to contribute in dealing with sin, through the incarnation of His dear Son. Through "Homo Sapiens" the Lord has fully dealt with the sin question and eventually will remove it from His presence forever. Christ died for the sins of the whole world but only those who accept the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal Savior will enter into the new creation. The unpardonable sin is the rejection of the Lord, as one's personal Savior. By this act of faith, one is adopted into the family of God. There is no other way into the Royal family of God, but through Jesus Christ. (Jn.14:6. Once that is accomplished, you become acceptable by God for an appointment in God's judgement

hall. Your faithfulness to this high calling is very essential. As we go through this life, you cannot serve God as well as mammon! The rewards for faithfulness will be given out when the judgement seat of Christ takes place, after the Rapture. (2 Cor.5:10.) There will be many saved so as by fire (1 Cor.3:15.), depriving them of future rewards, or high positions in the judgement halls of God. It should be the concern of every Christian to be faithful to the Lord, not for the reward, but rather in appreciation for what our God of grace has done for us. I do not want to come before the Lord empty handed, but I desire to be able to return, whatever reward will be due to me, to the Lord Jesus Christ. By the grace of God, we are what we are, and as students of the Word of God, please remind yourselves constantly of this important standing that we have before God. It is, by the grace of God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, that we are able to accomplish something in this life for His glory and honor.

IMPORTANT JUDGEMENTS OF GOD

During this present age of grace, one may be prone to believe that God is overlooking our short comings, but this is far from the truth. When sin is in the life of the Christian, God is aware of it and God the Holy Spirit becomes grieved and attempts to convict the Christian of that sin, until he makes things right. Sometimes the Christian who is grieving the Holy Spirit becomes hardened to the voice of the Holy Spirit, causing His power to be quenched and eventually, sickness may be the results or even death. (Eph.4:3; Jn.16:8; 1 Tim.5:19; Rom.6:16.) This unfaithfulness and unconfessed sins in the Christian's life can cause sickness and death. May we be mindful to confess our shortcomings before the Lord, at all times, and especially before we partake of "The Lord's Supper", which we call communion. Perhaps it would be good to list these various coming judgements of God for further study. May we remember as we study these various judgements, that the total of sin was judged at the Cross of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the issue is no longer the sin question but rather it is the acceptance or rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ. However, this does not excuse you of ignoring sin in your life, or give you a license to continue in sin. "What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer in it? Know ye not that, as many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? Therefore, we are buried with Him by baptism into death, that as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of His death, we shall be also in the likeness of His resurrection; Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him. Knowing that Christ, being raised from the dead, dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over Him. For in that He died, He died unto sin once; but in that He liveth, He liveth unto God." Rom.6:1-10.

Christ has paid the total debt of sin, and fulfilled the total law of God in our stead. The sin question has been removed, and it has become "The Son Question". God has poured out His total wrath for sin upon His Eternal Son, that you and I might be set free from the bondage of sin, and to be free to serve God without the penalty of sin. Let us take heed to these warnings

listed in God's Word, realizing that Christ has paid the penalty in our behalf. God the Father has poured out His supreme and total judgement upon sin through the Lord Jesus Christ.

THE SUPREME JUDGEMENT OF GOD

The Old Testament depicts the necessity for judgements for sin, through the animal sacrifices. "And almost all things are by law purged with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission." Heb.9:22. That was why the animal sacrifices were provided, but merely as a covering, until the Lord Himself would fulfill the law and pay the debt of our sins. "And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins." Matt.26:27-28. The Holy Spirit revealed to John the Baptist, "Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world." Jn.1:29b. Because of the supreme sacrifice of the Eternal Son of God, we who believe are set free from the wage of sin which is death, and by faith have received the gift of God through Christ Jesus. Through our faith, we have been accepted by God the Father through the Lord Jesus Christ, who is our High Priest in the heavenlies, having presented His blood once and forever and becoming the propitiation for our sins. God has taken the total judgement for our sins upon Himself, through His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. This is of great importance for us to understand the thoroughness that God places upon judgements against sin. May we examine some of the manifestations of Biblical judgements.

BIBLICAL JUDGEMENTS

- 1. Self Judgement in our daily Christian life. (1 Jn.1:9.)**
- 2. Partial Judgement for those fallen angels who left their given area. (Jude 6.)**
- 3. Those Angels in the Bottomless Pit until the Abomination of Desolation. (Rev.9:1-11.)**
- 4. Those angels under the Euphrates River. (Rev.9:13-21.)**
- 5. Those Christians who take communion unworthily and become weak and sickly and with some removed by death. (1 Cor.11:27-32.)**
- 6. There is the possibility that Christians can commit sin unto death and be removed prematurely from the earth. (Rom.6:16.)**
- 7. The Judgement Seat of Christ. (1 Cor.3:12-15; 2 Cor.5:10.)**
- 8. The casting of Satan and his fallen angels out of Heaven, never to return. Then Satan will make his final stand against God, during the Great Tribulation which is called by Daniel, "The Abomination of Desolation". (Rev.12:7-12.)**

9. **The Great Tribulation where the ungodly shall be partially judged as the wrath of God falls upon this earth, after the Rapture. (Dan.9:27; Rev.6-18.)**
10. **The Judgement of the nations during the Battle of Armageddon, as Christ returns to set up His Kingdom of Righteousness, which will continue for a thousand years. (Rev.19:11-21.)**
11. **The final judgement of the beast and false prophet as they are eternally cast into the Lake of Fire. (Rev.19:20.)**
12. **Satan chained and sent to prison with his fallen angels for a thousand years. (Rev.20:1-3.)**
13. **The separation of the sheep from the goats as the Millennium begins. (Matt.25:31-46.)**
14. **The Judgement of the nations during the thousand years and the saints will rule and reign with Christ, judging the nations. (Rev.20:4; Rev.5:10.)**
15. **The judgement of the nations at the end of the Millennium, as they try to make war against Christ. (Rev.20:7-9.)**
16. **The Sum Total of the fallen angels and Satan cast into the Lake of Fire to be tormented day and night forever. (Rev.20:10.)**
17. **The Great White Throne Judgement of the ungodly of all ages, with their destination in the Lake of Fire. (Rev.20:11-15.)**

These are the final judgements which will take place before the New Heavens and the New Earth are brought into creation by Almighty God. Some of these judgements will involve the saints having a part with the Lord Jesus Christ, such as the Judgement seat of Christ (2 Cor.5:10). Others are God's direct dealing with various judgements. The battles to be fought are also included in this series of judgements. Some of these judgements are partial and some are the final judgements of God. May we study these carefully and always remember to rightly divide the Word of truth. (2 Tim.2:15.) "Now all these things happened unto them for examples, and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the ages are come. Wherefore, let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall." 1 Cor.10:11-12.

Before we study the new creation which God has spoken about in the Bible, there is a final judgement which needs our special attention. That is "**The Great White Throne**" judgement, which will be the final judgement that Almighty God will make against sin, and at the same time, glorify The Eternal Son of God, who became the "Sin Bearer", judging total sin at the cross of Calvary. This will become the eternal separation of good from evil, forever and ever. The two shall never meet again, to the praise and glory of God! Every person that has rejected the Lord in his lifetime, will be resurrected from the dead to receive his or her final judgement, being cast into the eternal lake of fire. There will be no excuses that will be valid and all the

unbelievers will be separated from God forever and ever, without another chance for forgiveness. Christ the sin bearer was offered and refused by these ungodly and since they rejected Christ in their lifetime, why should they desire to live eternally with Him? There was and is no other name, whereby we must be saved, apart from the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ. It will be a sad day for billions of those who remain in the graves, to come forth for the second resurrection and fall short of the glory of God. There are many very religious people who have been brain washed by Satan and find themselves condemned and destined for the Lake of Fire.

THE FINAL JUDGEMENT OF GOD

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT

THE FINALITIES OF GOD

The kingdom of righteousness is not the ultimate in God's righteousness, but it is the final test that mankind will be exposed to, before God brings in everlasting righteousness, according to Daniel 9:24. For one thousand years this present world is to be ruled in absolute **"Perfect Righteousness" of God**, with **a rod of iron**. This is beyond our imagination, with **"The Very Living God"**, ruling the whole earth. As we consider this, it would seem easy for God the Creator of the Universe to rule one of His planets, but there is more at stake to this whole enterprise. The subjects of which God is to rule are not puppets or robots, but have been granted **"Freedom of Choice"**. The first test among human beings was in the garden of Eden, under the most favorable conditions, and in direct communication with God, who walked in the cool of the evening with Adam and Eve. Our forefather and mother were made absolutely perfect and without sin, being the most intelligent beings that ever lived upon this earth, and lacked in nothing. The problem was, they wanted that which was not theirs, and so fell into sin, becoming totally depraved. The entire and total generations that followed were also totally depraved. God being omniscient to all things, knew that this would happen, and before the foundations of the earth, **"The Second Adam"**, being very **"God/Man"**, the Incarnate One, existed and was ready in the fullness of time to redeem those who believe, bringing them out from the slave market of sin. This newness of life is freely offered to all who would believe, **"But these things are written, that, ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through His name."** John 20:31.

This will be the same issue that all human beings will face during the Millennium. In understanding some of the details of this coming rule in perfect righteousness, Satan will be bound and continually fall in outer space for the duration of the thousand years. No one will be able to blame their situation upon the devil during those thousand years. Satan will be bound, nature will be restored, there will be no poverty, the wild animals will be tame, and the raptured saints of God will reign with Christ in their glorified bodies. (Rev.5:10.) One would think that the whole world would rush to serve the Lord Jesus Christ and try to please Him with every effort. But this will not be the case, since they will still be in their totally depraved bodies. Many will be lovers of darkness, rather than light and be the workers of iniquity.

As raptured believers in our glorified bodies, we will be sent forth to present the kingdom teachings to the whole world. Our experience will be without a doubt the most valuable, being sanctified and glorified, having experienced seven years in heaven and equipped with the good tidings of the gospel of the kingdom. We also will be protected by Almighty God through His Eternal Son, who will yield the rod of iron in Jerusalem. We will have, physically, passed from death unto life, never again to die. There will be no casualties among the ruling saints, regardless of the resentment from many of the earthly people. Although righteousness will reign, the total depravity of man will remain, and each individual will have to make a choice. The conditions will be perfect with everything necessary provided. The courts and the political situation will be without a flaw. Justice will be had for all and crime will not be tolerated during those thousand years. Since nature will be restored, so the fertility of all earthly people will be extended, making possible an expanded population throughout the whole world. Communication and transportation will be excellent and travel will be made with the greatest of ease, comfort and security. This will continue for the entire thousand years with a final test.

THE FINAL TEST

And when the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle; the number of whom is as the sand of the sea." Rev.20:7-8. After all of the teaching of the righteousness of God, under the most favorable conditions, many of the earthly people allow Satan to deceive them. We read that after the thousand years of righteousness, "that he must be loosed a little season." Rev.20:3b. The Lord Jesus Christ will still be in Jerusalem, but as we read, Satan will be loosed and become active with his deception among all the people of the earth. He will not be doing this alone, but will have his billions of demons to help him.

We have in our studies, seen how these evil forces will surround Jerusalem and will attempt to capture Christ and destroy Him, BUT GOD in one verse describes this final battle. **"And they went up on the breadth of the earth and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them."** Rev.20:9. It will be just that simple for God to finally destroy the evil forces. Satan and all the demons will be immediately cast into the eternal lake of fire and will remain there for ever and ever! From this final battle, we can only conclude the following-

- 1. God's fullness of time has come for the separation of all evil from His goodness.**
- 2. Apart from the new birth, man continues to be totally depraved.**
- 3. God is almighty and will defeat all evil forces forever and ever.**
- 4. God has judged all sin at the cross and will bring in everlasting righteousness.**
- 5. We will see the glorious deliverance and victory from heaven, with fire from heaven devouring the rebellious people from around the world.**

6. **This final battle will usher in the final judgement of the great white throne.**
7. **All the unregenerate of all times will take part in the second resurrection to be eternally judged and cast into the eternal lake of fire.**
8. **Every knee shall bow before the Eternal Son of God and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.**

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT

THE SECOND RESURRECTION

We are told by the Word of God, "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." Rev.20:6. This clearly demonstrates and infers that there will be a second resurrection, which is called the second death. This second resurrection will take place, after God has fully dealt with all of the fallen angels and cast them into the eternal lake of fire. Now the Lord turns to the unregenerate, who have been in hell, waiting their final judgement. It is noteworthy to understand from the Scriptures, that there will be these two resurrections, and not a general resurrection as proposed by some religious organizations. Christ being the first fruit of the first resurrection, with proof and example, when some graves in Jerusalem burst open, "And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints that slept were raised, and came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many." Matt.27:52-53. This was certainly pure evidence of Christ being the first fruits and these could testify to it. This first resurrection, which has begun by Christ will continue through the Rapture of the saints of past ages, and of this present age and on through including the tribulation and kingdom saints. The final resurrection, called the second death will be the second resurrection when the unregenerate of all ages will come forth and bow before the Lord Jesus Christ as He is seated on the great white throne. "But now is Christ risen from the dead and become the first fruits of them that slept." 1 Cor.15:20. As has been mentioned, there are several phases of the first resurrection, which will end with the millennium. Though they occur at different times, they all are part and parcel of the first resurrection.

Since there are but two resurrections, this necessitates another group of human beings who will be activated through the second resurrection, which is also called the second death. Make no mistake about this second death, for most certain it will be an eternal living death. God has His method of computerizing every event of every individual, even to the thought and intent of man. Nothing can be hidden from God, who knows when a sparrow falls, and not only could number the hairs upon your head, but could also number the sands of the sea, if He so wished to do so. "Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? And one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not, therefore; ye are of more value than many sparrows." Matt.10:29-31. God's capacity is endless and His decisions are absolute! God's records are kept and this second resurrection

includes all of the unbelievers of all ages from wicked Cain, right through to the last human being who will reject Christ as their personal Savior. There are several reasons why the rest of the dead, after the first resurrection, will have to be raised from the dead, according to God's Word. All of these wicked have never had the complete sentence passed upon them, but regardless of whether they were religious, self righteous or based their acceptance upon their good works, or were just plain wicked, their rejection of Christ becomes the issue of their judgement. Note the following.

1. **God is just and will judge their individual activities, thought, word, and deed according to their own merit.**
2. **All human beings will have to bend their knees before their Creator, whether they want to do so or not. (Phil.2:9-11.)**
3. **Every unbeliever will have to stand before the Great White Throne, where their individual verdict will be pronounced. (Rev.20:11-15.)**
4. **Every unbeliever will continue to exist on into eternity, and be aware of his or her eternal separation from God and forever experience the wrath of God. (Jn.3:36.)**
5. **God is in the process of dealing with total sin, regardless of the circumstances, so that He can separate it entirely from the new creation which will take place. (Dan.9:24; Rev.20:13-15.)**

GOD'S RECORDS WILL BE REVEALED

God has been keeping a complete record of the thoughts, words and deeds of every person, and since His Son died for the sins of the whole world, God will turn to the good accomplishments that these unbelievers have performed. Prior to this white throne judgement, we as believers will be examined at the judgement seat of Christ. The good works of wood, hay and stubble will be burned. (1 Cor.3:12-13.) The believers judgement will be for rewards and responsibilities, according to their faithfulness. Before the great white throne judgement the Bible teaches that all mankind, with their personal righteousness fall short of God's requirements. **"But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf, and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away."** Isa.64:6. The acid test will be placed upon the unbeliever's **"Best that they could do"** and they will fall short of the glory and righteousness of God. (Rom.3:23.) The believer's as they will stand before the judgement seat of Christ, will be based upon God's standards and each will receive their reward and responsibility, according to God's evaluation of their faithfulness. However, the great white throne judgement will no doubt be for the degree of punishment that these ungodly will receive, within the eternal lake of fire. These unbelievers have rejected God's provision, thinking that they had individual and personal merit. **"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according**

to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hades delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works." Rev.20:12-13.

I am amazed at the unbelievers, who are ready and willing to take their chances to be acceptable according to personal merit, rather than to accept God's provision for the forgiveness of sin, through His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ, who took the total judgement of all sin upon the cross of Calvary. May we continually rejoice that our sins have been paid for and may this encourage us to keep short accounts with God, confessing our sins. (1 Jn.1:9.) It is going to be a sad day for multitudes that have been depending upon religion, and personal merit, to gain them entrance into the glorious future. As the heavenly angels open the book of life and find that these unbelievers names have been blotted out of the book of life because of the rejection of Christ, they must then turn to their personal account in the books of works. What will these records reveal? These records will reveal personal achievements upon which the individuals based their hope of the future.

As these books are opened and the sentence declared, there will be a great upheaval of death and hades, preparing for the billions of unbelievers to be cast into the lake of fire. **"And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death."** Rev.20:14. Then the sad part comes when these billions upon billions of lost souls will be thrown into the lake of fire and never to escape the eternal wrath of God. **"And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire."** Rev.20:15. Although many will gnash their teeth and be stricken with pain, every mouth will be stopped, for their hope lay in emptiness and despair.

THE BOOK OF LIFE AND THE BOOKS OF WORKS

"And I saw a **great white throne**, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them." Rev.20:11. This gives us the picture as to who is this one sitting upon the throne? It is none other than the Creator of heaven and earth, who will eventually cause the heavens and the earth to pass away, making room for the new heavens and the new earth. This can only be the Lord Jesus Christ. "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made." Jn.1:3. Only the Creator could at His command, cause the heavens and the earth to pass away. "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are in it, shall be burned up." 2 Pet.3:10.

It will be the Lord who will be seated upon the great white throne, judging every unbeliever. Some critics may say, that would be impossible to do, and if it were possible, it would take years and years to reveal these records. Not so, for all of this can be done simultaneously with God's instant files. Nothing is too hard for the Lord, for He is the God of the impossible.

One often wonders, as this final event is studied, why God brings the book of life into consideration. It is obvious that these who stand before the White Throne, have never had their names written in the book of life, or they were written, having their sins taken away at the cross, and because of unbelief at death their names have been blotted out. Had their names been

accredited, they would have had their part in the first resurrection. Can it be possible, since hell was never prepared for human beings, that all mankind could have been recorded in this book of life? It is also possible that the book of life is brought before them to prove to them that their name could have been in the book of life and then blotted out? Let us turn to the Word of God and see what God says. Do you remember when Moses pled for Israel, when they had sinned? "And Moses returned unto the Lord, and said, Oh this people have sinned a great sin, and have made them gods of gold. Yet now, if thou wilt forgive their sin; and if not, blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book which thou hast written. And the Lord said unto Moses, Whosoever hath sinned against me, him will I blot out of My book." Exod.32:31-33. Again we read, "The Lord shall blot out his name from under heaven." Deut.29:20. Please note what the Lord Jesus Christ says about this book of life. "He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before My Father, and before His angels." Rev.3:5. So evidently the book of life is brought before the white throne judgement as evidence that the accused must now stand upon their own records, rather than upon the saving grace of our loving Lord. Through the sacrificial death of the Lord, our names remain in the book of life, because He has blotted out our transgressions. "Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailling it to His cross." Col.2:14.

No one can deny the fact that when the Lord keeps records, there are no mistakes! It will be a dreadful day when the billions of dead are raised from the dead and must stand before this great white throne and "Every knee shall bow". (Phil.2:10. This, the Word of God declares, for the unbelievers will have to await their eternal sentence of a living death in the eternal lake of fire. What will their individual account in these books reveal? Christ paid the debt of the sins of the whole world, so that couldn't be in the records. Certainly the Lord would not bring up the sin question again, after settling that at the cross. The only conclusion that one can derive from this is - These books contain the records of all of their good deeds as unbelievers. Figuratively speaking, their good deeds will be placed on the one side of God's scale, and be weighed in contrast to the perfect righteousness of God, which is required. No creature in heaven or earth can measure up to God's standard of righteousness, and this will not only reveal to them that their deeds fall short of the glory of God, but will also stop their mouth's forever and ever. "Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by faith of Jesus Christ, and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified." Gal.2:16. "How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation, which at first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard Him." Heb.2:3. "Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is no other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Acts 4:12. God has been patient in every age, not wishing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. (2 Pet.3:9.) It is a tragedy that the multitudes have listened to Satan's deception, rather than to God's salvation.

THE FINAL JUDGEMENT UPON MANKIND

I remember, many years ago, while working amongst the Masai as a missionary, living in the foothills of Kilimanjaro, that a total eclipse of the sun was taking place. It was an amazing

sight to behold, but while it was taking place we could hear from the many villages, the wailing of the Masai and shouting in great fear. Some of those close enough to our Lasit mission station came running to us screaming and trembling, saying, "Etwā Engolong!" "The sun is dying" and then added saying, "The world is coming to an end"! We assured them that the sun would appear again and that it wasn't time for the world to come to an end. To know the truth of God's Word gives stability and confidence. The heathen are like the cults, and fanatics, with blindness from the god of this world system. (2 Cor.4:3-4.) Unless one is established in the Word of God, many foolish beliefs can be forthcoming. Several times there were cults that proclaimed that the world is coming to an end, and sold all that they had, and purchased white robes. Then their leaders led them up into the highest hills to await the end of the world. Even today as we see many signs of the last days, religious leaders often claim special revelation from God, concerning the "End Times". The times and the seasons are in the hands of God the Father and He has revealed sufficient evidence to us from the Bible, as to the events that will take place before the end of the world. If the Lord came while reading this book, to rapture all true believers home to glory, there would still be more than one thousand and seven years before both the heavens and the earth would be destroyed with fervent heat. The great white throne judgement will close the era of the old creation, with the second resurrection and the eternal second death. Listen to what the Bible says about it. "And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and Hades delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whoso was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." Rev.20:11-15. There will be weeping and wailing like never before, but all will be in vain. They gambled their life away with their personal pride.

God does not reveal very much about the procedure for this final judgement against the unbelieving world of mankind, but there is sufficient evidence for us to realize that there will be no survivors from among these unbelievers to enjoy the better things to come. These dead who have rejected God's Grace down through the ages will spend eternity separated from God, which is what they chose in their earthly life. Those who reject God and His provision for them will suffer forever through out eternity to come. Their decision while on earth will determine the consequences for ever and ever. The unbeliever's future is very grim and he can never blame God for not providing an escape route from the judgement of the lake of fire. To be eternally separated from the love of God would be enough punishment in itself, but there will be the continual out pouring of the wrath of God upon them forever!

This final judgement is coming and it is high time that we warn this unbelieving world of these terrible things to come. The Lord commissioned John on the Isle of Patmos to write this last revelation from the Lord Jesus Christ. It brings to light the prophecy in the Book of Daniel, giving us the ultimate revelation as well as explanation. For those who have put their trust in the Lord Jesus Christ, we look forward to the new creation which will follow these terrible judgements. "And He saith unto me, Seal not the words of the prophecy of this book; For the time is at hand. He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he that is filthy, let him be filthy

still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still. And, behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. Blessed are they that wash their robes, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For outside are dogs, and sorcerers, and fornicators, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. Rev.22:10-15. Each of us have the choice in making the company that we keep, both in this present world, and the world to come. You must make this choice now or suffer the consequences. True love comes only from God and to be separated from God is to be separated from love. Hatred will be the theme in the lake of fire forever, under extreme torment and the full fury of God's wrath. If one rejects the Lord Jesus Christ as his personal Savior, he then concludes that he is willing to face eternal torment, misery, and the full thrust of God's wrath. God has made a way of escape through His Son and has warned His creation that there is no other way into His presence but through His Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. God loves us with an everlasting love, and that is why He has provided His supreme sacrifice.

CONCLUSION

As we close this chapter in the history of judgements of God, may we be aware of the marvelous future that is ours, by the grace of God. God's mills of judgement grind very slowly, but rest assured they grind exceedingly fine! God has been very patient with all of humanity, and it never was His intention that one soul would perish, but has provided an escape route sufficient for all, regardless of circumstances. Give God His rightful place in your life and accept what the Holy Spirit has revealed in the Bible.

If you are a Christian, do not take these warnings lightly, knowing that nothing is hidden from God! Let us give of our best to the Master, while passing through this pilgrimage upon this earth. May we say as Paul the Apostle proclaimed, For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain." Phil.1:21. By God's grace, and being led by the Holy Spirit, may we reflect the love of the Lord Jesus, in and through our lives. Patiently wait for God's time in bringing in His "Utopia". And let us not be weary in well doing; for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. As we have, therefore, opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith." Gal.6:9-10. Genuine love can only come, as each believer depends upon God the Holy Spirit. He is the source of Divine love, "But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, self-control; against such there is no law." Gal.5:22-23. This is a package deal from God the Holy Spirit and should be manifested in every believer. Many of our countrymen are waiting for you and I to share "So Great Salvation" with them. Others who are believers need to be strengthened in the Lord and built up in the most holy faith. God is waiting for you to accept the challenge. Remember what our precious Lord and Savior Jesus Christ has said. "for many are called but few chosen." Matt.20:16b. I once asked a Dr. Leu from Taiwan, how they used that verse among the Taiwanese and he said, "Many are called, but few are God's choice". That to me reveals a great truth of the Bible. The reason why so few are God's choice, is because of sin and selfishness rules in their lives.

We as believers are spared from the Great White Throne, only by the grace of God. We have come to the Lord and He washed us white as snow with the precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. Yes, the wages of sin are death, but we received the gift of God which is eternal life. "For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved." Jn.3:17. It was not of works whereby we have been saved, lest some should boast, but is it entirely a gift of God through the Lord Jesus Christ. There is no other name given among men, whereby we must be saved. Christ is the way, the truth and the life and no one can approach God the Father by any other way. We who have believed in the Lord Jesus Christ have been set free from this terrible wrath of God. We deserved eternal damnation but by God's grace through the Lord's death, we now claim salvation.

God's great plan of all ages has been set forth in the Bible for our learning and admonition. We have learned that religion cannot save us from the wrath to come, but it takes a personal relationship with Almighty God. That can only be acquitted by the new birth provided by God the Holy Spirit, when we take the Lord Jesus Christ as our personal Savior. May we also remember that what the Lord has begun in our lives, He will also accomplish it. The indwelling of God the Holy Spirit has sealed us in God the Father and God the Son. "Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that Great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen. Heb.13:20-21. It is God the Holy Spirit working within us, glorifying the Lord Jesus Christ, through our obedience unto the Father and our good works unto the Lord. "For it is God who worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure" Phil.2:13. There are many a personal battle to be fought in our Christian walk with the Lord, and we need always remember that our strength cometh from above. We have been call out of this worldly pattern of life and brought into the eternal family of God. Victory is already ours, through the Lord Jesus Christ. God Himself has come to this earth in the form of man apart from sin and has overcome all evil forces for you and for me. May each of us live above the daily circumstances, knowing that God is preparing great things for those who have been bought with the precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. "Now unto Him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy, to the only wise God our Savior. be glory and majesty. dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen." Jude 24-25.

Satan and all evil forces will come to an end, in God's own time. All the prophesy within the Bible, will be fulfilled, exactly like God has said it would. This is not fatalism, but realism, knowing that God knows everything. Don't be deceived by Satan's lies and these false prophets, for we must be in such a close fellowship with God the Holy Spirit, allowing Him to guide us into all truth. "But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto His eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after ye have suffered awhile, make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle you. To Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen." 1 Pet.5:10-11.

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER SIX.

- 1. Why did God choose to give freedom of choice to human beings?**
- 2. What has happened to all human beings through Adam's sin? Script.**
- 3. Give a Scriptural description of the character of Satan when created.**
- 4. Will all the people born during the Millennium want to obey the Lord Jesus Christ and desire to do the right thing? Scripture.**
- 5. Where will Satan and his demons be during the Millennium? Scripture**
- 6. When Christ completes a thousand year reign upon this earth, give an account of the activities of Satan and his demons. Scripture.**
- 7. From where will Christ reign during the Millennium? Script.**
- 8. Write a short essay on "The Activities of the Saints of All Ages, During the Millennium". Use the Scriptures.**
- 9. List the coming judgements and Scriptures from Pentecost onward.**
- 10. Write an essay, "Christ's Millennium Rule". Scripture.**
- 11. When in the plan of God does mankind get the final test? Scripture.**
- 12. Name at least 8 final events as God deals with depraved man. Script.**
- 13. Explain and describe "The Great White Throne Judgement". Script.**
- 14. Explain the two resurrections with Scripture.**
- 15. Name 5 events before the Great White Throne Judgement.**
- 16. What do you consider as "The Books of Works"? Rev.20:12.**
- 17. What do you consider as "The Book of Life"? Rev.20:12.**
- 18. Will there be sin when the new heavens and earth are created? Script.**
- 19. Write concerning Colossians 2:14-15.**
- 20. As Christians, what is our duties today? Scripture please.**

- 21. When Christ rules during the thousand year reign, what two circumstances does He face? Scriptures.**
- 22. As believers, what do we have that is different from the unbelievers? Give Scripture.**
- 23. Will Satan be successful in deceiving the people born during the Millennium, when he is released? Scripture.**
- 24. Write an essay on Ezekiel 28:11-15.**
- 25. When will Satan's kingdom be destroyed forever? Scripture.**
- 26. Explain 1 Corinthians 6:2-3.**
- 27. What is the "Unpardonable Sin"?**
- 28. What does 1 Corinthians 3:15. mean?**
- 29. Name as many as possible of the important Biblical judgements? Scripture.**
- 30. What will be the final judgement of God? Scripture.**
- 31. What will be the final test from God? Scripture.**
- 32. What do we conclude as we have studied God's final plan of all ages? Scripture.**
- 33. Has God kept a record of works of all human beings? Scripture.**

CHAPTER SEVEN



THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH

CHAPTER SEVEN

THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.

INTRODUCTION

The question may be asked, "Why is it necessary for God to make the New heavens and a new earth"? Understanding somewhat as to the plan of God and the events which have taken place among God's creatures, we will also understand God's reason for wanting all things new. There are some finalities of the past and the necessities of the future. The angels and the human beings were granted a freedom of choice to be obedient unto their Creator, or choose to "Do Their Own Thing"! In the spiritual realm, God has created the most intelligent angel in the form of Lucifer, giving him great authority in the heavens and a great army of angels as cherubim, he being "The Anointed Cherub". with great power. (Ezek. 28:14.) He along with all of the angels were put to the test of obedience, or disobedience before their Creator. Two thirds of God's angels remained faithful to their Creator and are now holy angels, having past their test and sin will never be the question again. They have reached their glorified positions in the universe. Satan and one third of the angels rebelled against their Creator and became fallen angels which we know as demons.

God in His omniscience, knew what the outcome would be and had made His plans accordingly. Knowing that sin would occur in the heavenlies, God has preserved the best for under perfect future creations. God's plans were to deal with any evil forces that could occur, and clear this rebellion completely from His future domain. However, no redemption was planned for the angelic hosts, as they dwelt in the heavenly abode and were not deceived. So the test was also placed upon mankind through Adam, where deception and correction could be made. This would also provide redemption and perfection, in preparation for all things becoming new. This also would give the freedom of choice satisfaction to His subjects and prepare them for the sinless life in eternity to come.

The key to God's plans is found in one verse of Scripture. Daniel 9:24.

- 1. To finish the transgression.**
- 2. To make an end of sins.**
- 3. To make reconciliation for iniquity.**
- 4. To bring in "Everlasting Righteousness".**
- 5. To complete all visions and prophecies.**
- 6. To anoint The Most Holy.**

I cannot emphasize this enough, for it is the most important issue in the economy of God. He did not want to make robots out of His creation, and at the same time deal a final blow against evil. You ask, "Why the New Heavens and the New Earth"? It can be simply stated, very clearly, "The old creation of both the heavens and the earth have been contaminated with sin, and God wants all things made new, to His glory and honor! Since sin was thoroughly dealt with at the cross, there will be no further occurrence of it in God's new creation. Now let us examine God's process of separating and sealing the sin question forever and ever. The two beasts of the tribulation will be dealt with and cast alive into the lake of fire. (Rev.19:20.) The Devil, Satan that Serpent and all of his demons will be cast into the lake of fire. (Rev.20:10.) The remaining ungodly among the human beings will be judged, condemned, and cast into the lake of fire. Then finally the old heavens and the old earth will be burned with fervent heat. May we now study the final judgement of the ungodly and the final destruction of God's old creation, and rejoice as the new heavens and the new earth are to be created, bringing in a new era where time will be no more.

God doesn't even want any place of remembrance of sin to exist in His kingdom and consequently a complete removal of the old realm. Since sin was thoroughly dealt with at the cross, there will be no further occurrence of it in God's new creation. Now let us examine God's process of separating and sealing the sin question forever and ever. From Cain on through the Bible, we have record as to the various tests that mankind was placed under. 1. At the very beginning of man upon this earth he was made absolutely **innocent** but with a choice. 2. Then as sin entered his pattern of thought, he was given moral responsibility and made accountable being led by his **conscience**. This failed due to his wrong choice, and a partial judgement was placed upon the whole world through the flood. This brings us to another form of test, 3. known as **human governments**, which became corrupt and controlled by the god of this world system (2 Cor.4:4.) A confusion of languages by God separated the nations, making possible for the development of one nation through one man, named Abram, through whom the Messianic hope could be guaranteed. 4. The unconditional Abrahamic covenant of **promise** was made by God, and based entirely upon being fulfilled by God. As time went on the nation Israel was formed. 5. God gave that nation the **Mosaic Law**, showing the perfection that God demanded to be holy and righteous before Him. Since no human man could possibly keep the whole law, God had to send His Eternal Son in the likeness of sinful man, apart from sin and fulfill the law for those who would believe. This necessitated 6. an age of **grace** by which every nation would benefit was brought to life on the day of Pentecost. During almost 2,000 years a bride for Christ is being born through God the Holy Spirit, which is known as the body of Christ. The final test that God has in store for the world will be 7. **The Kingdom Age**, in which God will restore all of nature and Christ and the saints will come and rule in perfect righteousness for a thousand years. Earthly man will be of a totally depraved nature and will have to make his choice under the most favorable conditions during the kingdom age.

As we come to the end of this age of Grace, the Rapture will take place and the most terrible events will take place upon this earth. We have already described those seven years of the wrath of God upon this world, which will take place after the Rapture. This is called "The Great Tribulation". During this seven year period of the tribulation the satanic power will be fully proclaimed. The two beasts of the book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ will run their evil course, under the control of Satan and his demons. The two beasts of the tribulation will

manifest their wickedness and then be dealt with and cast alive into the lake of fire. (Rev.19:20.) The devil and his demons will be locked up in the bottomless pit for the duration of the thousand, so that totally depraved man will have to make his own choice from within, with no outside influence, during Christ's reign of righteousness.

However, Satan and his demons will be loosed for a season (Rev.20:3.) and gather these discontent earthly people together to war against God and will be very successful.(Rev.20:7-9.) The battle intended, never takes place, as the Scripture indicates. Fire comes down from God the Father and devours them. And the Devil, Satan that Serpent and all of his demons will be cast into the lake of fire. (Rev.20:10.) The remaining ungodly among the human beings will be judged, condemned, and cast into the lake of fire. Then finally the old heavens and the old earth will be burned with fervent heat. May we now studied the final judgement of the ungodly and the final destruction of God's old creation, and rejoice as the new heavens and the new earth are to be created, bringing in a new era where time will be no more. In this, we can rejoice in the Lord, who will have the final victory in this battle for souls. The final judgement of all ungodly people who have rejected Christ as their personal Savior, will take place before the Great White Throne. Christ Himself will judge , and since all have fallen short of the glory of God, will be cast into the lake of fire. May we now consider this final judgement of God.

A. THE FINAL JUDGEMENT AT THE GREAT WHITE THRONE

The Second Resurrection

This will be the final judgement seat, and perhaps one of the largest gatherings from the dead, dating right back to cain, which has been called "The Way of Cain". The Lord reminded us, "Enter in at the narrow gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be who go in that way; Because narrow is the gate, and hard is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it." Matt.7:13-14. There will be billions of the ungodly and unbelievers who will be raised after the completion of the first resurrection. The Lord has said, "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." Rev.20:6. But those of the second resurrection will be brought forth from Sheol to be judged and placed in the lake of fire, which is the second living death. This will be in fulfillment of what is written. "And thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged," Rev.11:a. There are several events to precede this great judgement, which we have already declared. This judgement will come after the Millennium and after the final battle with Satan. It will be God's final judgement against total sin and with His final sweep, all the dead of all ages shall come forth from the physical death and face that Great White Throne, for the eternal living death. Christ will be seated on that great white throne and judge all of the unbelievers of all time. There will be no escape route for all those who have rejected Christ. This is the unpardonable sin which cannot be pardoned. There will be none of these pardoned because their names have been blotted out of the Lamb's Book of life. At the present time, these ungodly souls are in a place called Sheol, which has been mention in Luke chapter 16, verses 19 through 31. Abraham and all of the Old Testament saints were taken out

from Sheol and transferred to their Heavenly Paradise, when Christ led captivity captive. (Ps.68:18; Eph.4:8.) For this purpose, Christ descended into Sheol to lead forth all of the Old Testament saints, and bring them into the Father's heavenly Paradise. That is why Christ could say to the thief on the cross who acknowledged Him as Lord, that he would be with Christ in Paradise, rather than have him go to sheol. However, the ungodly and unbelievers of all ages will remain in sheol until that final day of judgement before the Great White Throne.

It is of the utmost importance that we distinguish the difference between **"The Day of the Lord"** and **"The Day of Christ"**. These judgements that we are talking about are judgements against the ungodly and are known as the **"Day of the Lord"**. **"For the day of the Lord of hosts shall be upon every one who is proud and lofty, and upon every one who is lifted up, and he shall be brought low."** Isa.2:12. Also note, **"Alas for the day! For the day of the Lord is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall come."** Joel 1:15. We are dealing with the judgements of Almighty against the ungodly and that final day will be when the judgement at **"The Great White Throne"** takes place. The day of Christ refers to the Judgement seat of Christ mentioned in 2 Cor.5:10. We also have references to this judgement of rewards for the saints in the following. (1 Cor.3:12-15; 1 Cor.1:7; 1 Cor.5:5; 2 Cor.1:14; Phil.1:6; Phil.1:10; Phil.2:16.)

You remember that Christ entered Sheol and led all the Old Testament believers into Paradise. There will only be the unbelievers in Sheol, when this second resurrection of the dead takes place. They will all have to stand before that Great White Throne and be judged. They all will be found guilty of falling short of the glory of God and have to face the judgement of eternity. There is one thing that they will have to acknowledge before they are cast into the eternal lake of fire. Here is what the Bible says, **"That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth, and every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God, the Father. Phil.2:10-11.**

The Second Living Death

All of the ungodly, remaining in Sheol shall be brought up out of that place of death, to be finally judged and cast into the lake of fire, **"where the worm dieth not."** (Mk. 9:43-48.) The Word of God clearly points out that this second death is going to be terrible, filled with hatred, gnashing of teeth, and bitterness forever and ever. There will be no rest for the wicked throughout eternity! The judgement that precedes the casting into the lake of fire may be very short, as God is able to reveal all the works of these unbelievers in a moment of time. That will not take long to pass judgement upon these billions. God is able to simultaneously show His Divine Righteousnesses required and their lack of attaining His standards. There is nothing impossible with God and can do this in moments. God's computers are far greater than anything that man can invent. God is the Master mind of all and nothing is impossible with God! **"And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire.**

This second death will be a continuous living death, with God's wrath remaining forever! The sum total of all sin will remain sealed off forever and keep on burning in the lake of fire, with no end. There will be no love but a continual hatred forever and ever. There will be no escape route for all the demons and ungodly and they will have to remain under punishment in that terrible place of burning fire and brimstone. Total sin was judged at the cross, with Almighty God paying the full debt of sin, but those who will be cast into the lake of fire will go there because they rejected the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal Savior. Satan and the demons as fallen angels will be there because they refused to have Almighty God to rule over them. They were not deceived as mankind, but chose to set up their own kingdom, under Satan and will forever have that kingdom in the lake of fire. Praise God for His wonderful plan to eliminate sin forever from his New Heavens and New Earth. Since sin has contaminated both heaven and earth, God has great plans to create all things new. The old order of creation must all pass away. Behold, all things will be come new. Therefore we will consider the passing away of all previous creation. It is but a small thing for God to create all things new, and you may rest assured that this new creation will be far superior to the old.

B. THE FINAL DESTRUCTION OF THE FIRST HEAVEN AND EARTH

We who live upon this present earth may think, "Why does God want to destroy this present world and all those millions of cities of stars and all this great wealth"? Our values as natural man are limited to those things that we see and handle in our daily life. Our method of development has been a very slow way, with all of the material provided. God's way is past our finding out, for all He needs to do is to plan it, say it and it becomes complete. All that we handle has been created out of nothing and God has set into motion a continual process of development. Let us examine a very special verse of Scripture. "While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal." 2 Cor.4:18. This should give us the clue as to true values. If this life style that we have on earth was more eternal than the heavenly realm, then God would prefer this, rather than the heavenly style. But since sin has entered into both the heavens and the earth, God is going to make all things new.

GOD'S REASONS FOR DESTROYING THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH

- 1. God's greatest anointed cherub, "Lucifer" rebelled against God. (Isa.14:12-17; Ezek.28:11-19.)**
- 2. The wrong choices were made by one third of His angels. (Rev.12:4.)**
- 3. Sin having entered into God's heavens, and contaminating them, God will make all things new. (Rev.21:1.)**
- 4. Satan, that devil and serpent has brought sin to this earth. (Gen.3:1-7.)**

5. **Satan has made this earth his domain, with great power, but under the sovereignty of God. (2 Cor.4:4; Matt.4:8-10; Lk.4:5-8.)**
6. **It took both heaven and earth to provide a Savior to remove the sin barrier and therefore every appearance of evil must be destroyed, making all things new.**
7. **In God's plans which are immutable, God has dealt with total sin in order to remove it forever. (2 Pet.3:7.)**

GOD'S METHOD IN THE DESTRUCTION OF HEAVEN AND EARTH

In our understanding of the Bible and as we study the various truths under observance, we need to bear in mind that time is never an issue with God. "But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day." 2 Pet.3:8. The early believers were expecting a quick return of the Lord and consequently kept on saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water, By which the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement and perdition of ungodly men." 2 Pet.3:4-7. From these statements we understand that each judgement of God has it's specific time and will be dealt with accordingly. The world that was first created perished when God sent the flood, covering the whole world with only eight souls saved. God always has a purpose in whatever He does, and in this case of the flood, God was preserving the Messianic hope and lineage, against total control by Satan. Satan was desirous to indwell all individuals as he did the serpent in the garden of Eden. BUT GOD, in His omniscience was prepared to meet that challenge, through His sovereignty. Satan never supposed that God would send a world wide flood and start all over again with just eight souls, but He did!

We must always remember that God has everything under His control and nothing can happen without Him knowing it, even when a sparrow falls! God is mindful of every situation. "The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness, but is long-suffering toward us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." 2 Pet.3:9. This is pure Divine love that God is waiting for precious souls to come to Him through His Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ.

THE DAY OF THE LORD WILL COME

God's promises are immutable and sometimes they are according to conditions, and other times they are unconditional, based entirely upon His Word. "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are in it, shall be burned up." 2 Pet.3:10. God abideth His time with all of these affairs and will bring them to past in His own time. "Hast thou not known? Hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the

Lord, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? There is no searching of His understanding." Isa.40:28. "Seeing, then, that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy living and godliness, Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, in which the heavens, being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?" 2 Pet.3:11-12. It was my privilege to travel to Japan and to see first hand what one of those two atomic bombs did to the city of Hiroshima. Each of those two bombs weighed approximately 600 lbs. One for Hiroshima and the other for Nagasaki. The damage was terrible as the elements, such as metal and other materials just melted together. Both those cities in Japan were utterly destroyed by some 600 lbs. What will be the results when the heavens of heaven and planet earth are all destroyed with fervent heat? When one considers this world with an inward core white hot, what damage will be done when both the heavens and earth are destroyed by God. This is certain, that both the heavens and the earth shall pass away with fervent heat.

God has better things prepared for us than anything of this world. Remember, "The Best is yet to come"! "But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him. But God hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit; for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God." 1 Cor.2:9-10. Since the Holy Spirit is able to show us some of these things that are to come, let us keep in fellowship with the Holy Spirit, if we are to understand these things to come. God has given us an insight into these terrible things to come, in comparison as to what has prepared for His own.

Terrible times are ahead for the ungodly, who will reject Christ, after the Rapture takes place. When we behold the Lord God Almighty as The Lamb, open those seals, this world is destined for the out pouring of the wrath of God. "And I beheld, when He had opened the sixth seal and, lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind. And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. And the kings of earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every slave, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains, And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of Him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb. For the great day of His wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?" Rev.6:12-17. This terrible wrath of God will fall upon the servants of the Devil during the great tribulation. "Come near, ye nations, to hear; and hearken, ye peoples: let the earth hear, and all that is therein; the world, and all things that come forth from it. For the indignation of the Lord is upon all nations, and His fury upon all their armies; He hath utterly destroyed them, He hath delivered them to the slaughter. Their slain also shall be cast out, and their stench shall come up out of their carcasses, and the mountains shall be melted with their blood. And all the hosts of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together like a scroll; and all their host shall fall down, as a leaf falleth off from the vine, and like a falling fig from the fig tree. For my sword shall be bathed in heaven; behold, it shall come down upon Edom, and upon the people of my curse, to judgement." Isa.34:1-5. This will be a great outpouring of the wrath of God with the fury of His

judgement upon all that has been contaminated with sin, apart from those redeemed by the blood of His Incarnate Son, the Lord Jesus Christ.

May we be mindful of these finalities, when all evil forces will be cast into the eternal lake of fire and hidden away in space somewhere, never to escape the eternal wrath of God. God's complete creation which has been infiltrated with sin, will be destroyed with fervent heat. It may seem to us as a great loss of wealth and beauty, but in the economy of God all is dispensable, being the Creator of all things out of nothing. I am sure, if I understand the Bible, that God has withheld the best for eternity to come! The first heaven and the first earth will pass away. (Rev.21:1b.) We as human beings may have many memories of these material things which we have dealt with for years, but the new eternal things will be far superior to the old that our whole pattern of thought will be eternally changed. The old realm of sin will be gone forever as we enjoy eternity to come in perfect fellowship with God, in our glorified bodies. Let us look into the future plans of God, as He has revealed them to us in His Precious Word. We are destined for God's utopia, as He desires to share His eternal glory with His creation. I thank God that by the grace of God I have a place prepared for me in the mansions of the Father. The eternal things of God will soon be revealed to us, when that "Air Lift" takes place and we see our Savior, "face to face" and become like unto Him. "Oh the love that drew salvation's plan, Oh the grace that brought it down to man, Oh the mighty gulf that God did span at Calvary"!

C. ALL THINGS WILL BE ETERNALLY MADE NEW

GOD'S PROPHETIC PROMISES

The Lord God Almighty, in His loving kindness to those who trust Him, will show many things to come. "Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare; before they spring forth I tell you of them." Isa.42:9. All things shall become new in God's "Utopia" to come. It is also amazing that the old things will be completely forgotten as we enter into God's new creation. "For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth, and the former shall not be remembered, nor come in mind." Isa.65:17. As we look for these new creations, Christ the Eternal Son of God is the first fruit of this new life, making possible for us to become new creatures in Christ Jesus, "Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creation; old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new." 2 Cor.5:17. We would like to see this come to pass immediately, but we must wait for the fullness of God's time.

GOD'S COMPLETE WRATH WILL BE POURED OUT

May we always remember, that time means nothing to Almighty God, who has never had a beginning, nor never will have an ending. "But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are in it, shall be burned up. Seeing, then, that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy living and godliness, Looking for and the hastening unto the coming day of God, in which the heavens, being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for a new heavens and a new earth, in which dwelleth

righteousness. Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of Him in peace, without spot, and blameless." 2 Pet.3:10-14. The new creation which God has planned for His faithful, cannot come until God's judgements are completed. All the wrong which has been committed against God's character will be fully avenged. We must remember that this battle for supremacy against Satan's kingdom of darkness must run its course although sin has been fully paid for by the Lamb of God, bringing redemption to those who believe. Perhaps before we venture into God's future creation, let us quickly consider the various aspects of the will of God according to the Bible,

GOD IS SOVEREIGN AND HIS WILL IS SECURE

The Eternal Son of God was sent forth by God the Father to provide so great salvation is now preparing to return in the clouds and gather the redeemed of all ages unto Himself, delivering them out from the wrath to come. (1 Thess.1:10.) The Lord will return to establish the Triune God's sovereignty, by setting up the righteousness of God among men. "And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven; and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other." Matt.24:30-31. "Remember the former things of old; for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure." Isa.46:9-10; That great king Nebuchadnezzar who was brought low, finally had to admit, "I Nebuchadnezzar, lifted up mine eyes unto Heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the Most High, and I praised and honored Him who liveth forever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and His kingdom is from generation to generation. And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing; and He doeth according to His will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth, and none can stay His hand, or say unto Him, What doest Thou?" Dan.4:34-35. God's perfect will by His sovereign rights, will be done. Yes, God has given to His creatures, the freedom of choice, but the consequence of our choice stands firmly. "There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death." Prov.14:12. We may do our own thing and gamble with the future or take God's way, who holds the future.

GOD'S PERFECT CHARACTER WILL BE MAINTAINED

The Lord Jesus Christ has given us the perfect prayer, "Our Father, who art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven." Matt.6:9-10. You and I cannot attain to perfection on our own as God's perfect character, but if we submit our will to the Lord, then God can bring it to pass. "Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen." Heb.13:20-21. God's holy character must be maintained throughout all of His

creation. "But, as He who hath called you ius holy, so be ye holy in all manner of life." 1 Pet.1:15. "For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God.- Not of works, lest any man should boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them." Eph.2:8-10. God demands His perfect righteousness and provides it for those who will accept it.

THAT WHICH GOD HAS PLANNED FOR ETERNITY WILL BE COMPLETED

The Lord Jesus Christ, willingly left His pace of authority in the heavenlies and humbled Himself and became obedient unto the cross. God expects us to willingly accept His perfect plans for our life, depending upon the Divine accomplishment in our lives, through Christ Jesus. "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God. But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men; And, being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross." Phil.2:5-8. God the Holy Spirit has been provided, not only to make us new creatures, but also to supply the power of God's new creation in and through our lives.

GOD'S SUPREME PURPOSE

TO SHARE HIS SUPREME GLORY WITH HIS CREATION

May we be clearly aware that nothing can be added to God or nothing can be taken away from God. Our Almighty God remains constant apart from His achievements, but what He desires, according to the Bible, is to share some of His eternal glory with those who will of their own free will, accept His provisions. Had we as the saints of God gone our own way, all of God's intended glory in our lives would be lost. But God's Word tells us, "Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." 1 Jn.4:4. "Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the children of God; therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew Him not. Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is. And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself as He is pure." I. Jn.3:1-3. As we will be reviewing what the Bible has to say about God's eternal creation, may we patiently wait, regardless of the circumstances which we face in our daily lives. Always remember that our Savior Jesus Christ first suffered and paid the price, and He will come personally to take us to those beautiful mansions of His Father, where He has prepared a place for us.

God IS SHARING HIS ETERNAL GLORY WITH HIS CREATION

Before Adam brought sin into our nature, making all of his posterity totally depraved, God in His omniscience prepared a way of escape, due to Adam's wrong choice. Eve was deceived by Satan, and God has used the seed of the woman to not only make atonement for the sins of the whole world, but also to bruise the head of Satan. (Gen.3:15.) Satan was aware of the

Everlasting God, who created him as an anointed cherub. No one has seen or can imagine all of the majesty and glory that the Triune God has always had. May I remind you, that God cannot be added unto or taken from, any of His glory. What Almighty God is doing is desiring to share some of His glory with His creation. It is of the greatest importance that we realize what God has started in our lives, so He will complete. Let us list but a few of these acts of grace in the lives of the believers. We deserved nothing but condemnation and eternal death, and unable to merit anything before God, being already dead in trespasses and sins. The Triune God who is full of compassion and gracious, prepared, provided and practiced Grace toward those who would believe, and here are some of the benefits.

1. **The penalty for sin paid in full. (Rom.8:2-4; Rom.8:31-34.)**
2. **Born and Identified by God the Holy Spirit. (Jn.3:3-6; 1 Cor.12:13.)**
3. **We become new creatures in Christ Jesus. (2 Cor.5:17.)**
4. **We become members of the Royal Family of God. (1 Pet.2:9.)**
5. **We become a new person. (Col.3:10; Eph.4:24.)**
6. **We are now citizens of heaven. (Phil.3:20-21.)**
7. **We have special blessings in heavenly places with Christ Jesus. (Eph.1:3-14.)**
8. **We have been called out from this world system and as God's witnesses, we are pilgrims and sojourners in this world. (Heb.11:13; 1 Pet.2:11.)**
9. **We have become a kingdom of priests to serve during the Millennium. (Rev.5:10.)**
10. **We have been made the righteousness of Christ. (Phil.3:9.)**
11. **The Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. (Jn.14:16-17.)**
12. **We will become the Bride of Christ. (Rev.19:7-8.)**
13. **A new name has been written down in heaven for us. (Rev.3:12.)**

THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH

God has kept the very best for eternity to come, where sin will never ever contaminate the eternity of eternities. "And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea." Rev.21:1. Mark closely for there will be but the two great creations, the first and the second. This new creation will be final and for

all eternity to come. It will bring in "Everlasting Righteousness". (Dan.9:24.) All battles will be fought with Christ as the Victor. Satan and all evil forces, with a sum total of all the demons and all the ungodly people will be eternally separated forever, being cast into the eternal lake of fire. This will be a living death under the eternal wrath of God. The Apostle John on the Isle of Patmos, had a pre-televised view of these marvelous things to come. "And I, John, saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and **God Himself shall be with them, and be their God.** And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be anymore pain; for the former things are passed away. And He that sat upon the throne said, **Behold I make all things new.** And He said unto me; Write; for these words are true and faithful. And He said unto me, **It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end.** I will give unto him that is athirst of the water of life freely. He that overcometh **shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.**" Rev.21:2-7. The statements from Almighty God are beyond our understanding and too wonderful to realize in these mortal bodies of ours. The anticipation to behold all of these marvels of God surges up within us, and we cry out as John did, "Even so, come, Lord Jesus." Rev.22:20b.

THE THIRD HEAVEN OF GOD THE FATHER

The third heaven where God the Father dwelleth, where only the Triune Godhead may enter, will remain the same. It was Lucifer and his army of cherubim who were responsible to guard against any intruders. He had the power to walk among the stones of fire along the border but not to enter into the private realm of the Godhead. (Ezek. 28:14.) God the Father's heaven will never be changed or disrupted in any way. It will remain the same forever and ever. It is the heaven that has always existed and never will have an ending, as the Triune God. However, the present heaven of the angels will be burned with fervent heat and by fire it will be destroyed forever. The new heavens will take the place of the present heaven.

THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH AS PREDICTED

Sin has entered into God's first creation, sin has been judged and condemned at the cross of Calvary, and all creation has been cursed and condemned by God Almighty. "For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. And not only they, but ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body." Rom.8:22-23. Abraham lived his whole life in tents as a witness to the world, "For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God. Heb.11:10. Isaiah was given the revelation by the Holy Spirit of the new heavens and the new earth. "For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind. But be glad and rejoice forever in that which I create; for, behold, I create Jerusalem, a rejoicing, and her people a joy." Isa.65:17-18. This of course is very interesting to realize that Jerusalem will always be, throughout the new heavens and earth. John was carried away in the spirit as a preview of the New Jerusalem which would be. "And he carried me away in the Spirit

to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. Having the glory of God; and her light was like a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal;" Rev.22:10-11. The old Jerusalem will be destroyed forever, and this New Jerusalem will come down from Almighty God. This old realm of the earth is kept in reserve with the core of the earth which is on fire, will burst forth with total destruction. God revealed through His Word these things which the scientists of today are finally discovering.

This earth could explode at anytime, but is reserved by God for His time! God is waiting for an exact time, when every possible soul is brought to the knowledge of Jesus Christ, with some believing by the grace of God. Yes, there are and will be many earthquakes before God's time for final destruction. We have explored into what will happen during the tribulation, and then will come the end, in the fullness of time. Almost every month we hear of these earthquakes in many places around the world, but they are nothing compared to total destruction of the whole earth with fervent heat, coming forth from the very center of this earth.

God is allowing sin to run its course, having judged all sin at the cross of Calvary. God has prepared an **"Eternal kingdom of Perfection"**, which will come to pass in the fullness of time. All that we can anticipate that God will create will be far superior to anything imaginable. Even the garden of Eden will not measure up to what God is going to create after the final judgement. "For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name remain." Isa.66:22. This of course refers to the coming eternal new heavens and the new earth, and will be possessed by the nations.

ALL THINGS BECOME NEW

Adam and Eve could tell us much about that beautiful garden of Eden, which only occupied a portion of this earth in the Middle East. But when God creates the New Heavens and the New Earth, they will be perfect throughout and made ready for an eternal perfect kingdom of righteousness. Our minds cannot fathom the depth of God's wisdom in this present creation, let alone that which is to come. If we as the saints of God, have enjoyment in this present world, how much more we will have in the New Heavens and the New Earth. In order to keep things looking good in this present life, it takes a lot of work by the sweat of our brow. Then, when all things are made new, there will be perfection everywhere and the glory of God will shine forth forevermore. I am looking forward to the reality of the promises of God, and I wish to share it with others. That is why I love teaching God's precious Word through these Biblical textbook lessons.

God who is sovereign, Father, Son, and Holy Spirit have allocated to Christ the establishing of this new eternal kingdom of righteousness, will be presented to God the Father. "Then cometh the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God the Father; when He shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For He must reign, till He hath put all enemies under His feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. For He hath put all things under His feet. But when He saith all things are put under Him, it is manifest that He is excepted, which did put all things under Him. And when all things shall be subdued unto Him, then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God may be all in all. 1 Cor.15:24-28. It may seem strange to thee that Christ, being the second Person

in the Trinity, will eventually give over to God the Father full authority. But also remember that God the Father has given to Christ all authority both in heaven and earth to accomplish the great plan of the Triune God. "Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name." Phil.2:9.

God has reserved the very best for His final perfection of all things, including the angelic as well as the human beings. As we think in terms of this present creation, "The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament showeth His handiwork." Ps.19:1. What must the future creation be like, manifesting the glory of God? There will be many changes in the new heavens and the new earth, so let us consider some of these marvels of God concerning the new creation. There will be many surprises that God has reserved for His own. Sin will be forever separated from this new creation and whatever pleasures we experience in this present life will be as nothing compared to what God has for "Those Who Believe". There is only a small portion given as to "All Things Becoming New", but we can trust God to do "exceeding abundantly above all that we could ask or think",

THE NEW HEAVEN

There will be two heavens that will be changed, the atmospheric first heaven and the second heaven where the Throne of God was established, the Mansions of God, the Altar of God, the Temple of God, the Paradise of the saints of God and the angelic abode. There will be one heaven that will remain the same, and that is the third heaven, where the Triune God have their privacy. We do not have much information about this new heaven and as a matter of fact we have very little information about the present heavens. I due time we will not only see the present heavens, but will also see the marvelous creation of the new heavens. We often put great confidence in these material things which we handle every day, but the dwelling place of God and His angels is more secure than the things which we can presently see, touch and handle. We have John's statement, as to what he previewed of things to come. "And I saw a new heaven" Rev.21a. Then John heard a great voice out of the present heavens, "And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away." Rev.21:3-4. This will be the condition both in heaven and upon earth.

THE NEW ETERNAL EARTH

The old earth along with the present heavens shall pass away with fervent, making room for all things becoming new. John saw this new earth and he also noticed that there would be no more sea. (Rev.21:1.) That is an interesting factor, where the new earth will have streams and rivers, but no sea or ocean. In other words, all of the earth will be livable and sufficient for all the redeemed from all nations. We do not know the size of this new world, but we know that God does all things well and there will be sufficient space for every race. God will never lack for space, as His domain is limitless and never ending. The wicked billions of both fallen angels and unregenerate man will be sealed forever in the eternal lake of fire, separated from the vast

domain that God is going to create for the new heavens and the new earth. What God promises, He will surely bring it to pass.

MULTITUDES NO MAN COULD NUMBER

The billions of saints of God from all generations will be possessing both the heavens and the earth. From every generation there have been countless believers, and they all will be given glorified bodies for eternity. Even during that coming great tribulation, there will be a great revival among men. The 144,000 of the Jewish tribes will do a marvelous job of evangelizing during the tribulation with the cost of their lives. "After this I beheld and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and peoples, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God who sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb." Rev.7:9-10. Space will certainly not be the issue, when one realizes these vast numbers of precious souls around the throne of God. These multitude whom will come forth from the tribulation will be fed from the table of God. We know that this great throng of people will be those who will come forth from the great tribulation, giving their lives in testimony of Jesus.(Rev.7:14.) "They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes." Rev.7:16-17. There will be no lack of food, clothing and shelter in the heavenlies!

When God makes all things new, we can be assured that there will be a place prepared for the great multitudes of saints, when God makes the new heavens and the new earth. God has many secrets and they are all rightfully God's. He has revealed to us sufficient, which takes a lifetime to understand but a fraction of all of it. (Deut.29:29.)

THE LAMB'S WIFE

For almost two thousand years, God the Holy Spirit has been seeking out a bride for the Lamb of God. We who are members of that great body are "**The Called Out Ones**", during this mystery age of grace. All of these saints will number from Pentecost until the Rapture takes place. The marriage will take place in heaven **after** the Rapture, and sometime during the great tribulation upon this present earth. "Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints." Rev.19:7-8. As the future wife of the Lamb, we have already been made joint heirs with Christ as members of the Royal family of God. We have been adopted into the family of God, being born again of God the Holy Spirit. We now have the Divine spark, as God the Holy Spirit will dwell and remain within us forever and ever. (Jn.14:16-17.)

God desires that we live in this present world, as His witnesses to His saving grace, through the precious blood of the Lamb of God. The Eternal Son of God is the Lamb of God who has taken away the sins of the whole world. We as the Lamb's future wife have been left here to be His faithful witness, as members of the Royal family of God. We have been made joint heirs with Christ who has promised us "Riches Untold" in the eternity to come. "For I am persuaded

that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creation, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus." Rom.8:38-39.

We as the future "Lamb's Wife" are partakers with all the glory of the Lamb of God, who is the Eternal Son of God. "For it pleased the Father that in Him should all the fullness dwell; And, having made peace through the blood of His cross, by Him to reconcile all things unto Himself - by Him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. And you, that were once alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath He reconciled in the body of His flesh through death, to present you holy and unblamable and world in His sight," Col.1:19-22.

THE NEW JERUSALEM

It is a little confusing to us as Bible students to have a comparison or identification as the bride or Lamb's wife, in the form of the New Jerusalem coming down from heaven. " However we must deal with this terminology and depend upon God the Holy Spirit to guide us into the right understanding. As the future bride or the Lamb's wife, we have become partakers of that special entity in this mystery age. We will be associated with the "New Jerusalem" coming down from heaven. But may remember that our future marriage to the Lamb of God, and our association to the New Jerusalem, will effect the whole realm of heaven and earth. This "New Jerusalem" will be the eternal capital of the world, with Christ, the King of kings and Lord of lords, seated upon the throne. We as members of the body of Christ, we will be associated with the nation Israel, through whom God brought salvation to "Whosoever Believeth". "And there came unto me one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come here, I will show thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. Rev.21:9. This was a real preview that John saw. John will be part of the bride, as we also will be there. Only God can wayward the worried to come in such a manner. Time is nothing for God to deal with and can see exactly as it will be, down the corridor of time. The "Shikinah Glory" of God will shine forth through the New Jerusalem coming down from God. This was by no means just a dream that John had, but it was real because it could be measured exactly as it was.

When you read and study this description of the New Jerusalem, with all the wealth of the most precious gems and costly material, you can only say, "Nothing of the greatest of value is impossible with God! The glory of God will be a continual light in that city and there will be no night there. The gates will never be closed and the nations of the world will come freely. All nations shall exalt the Lord and bring glorious things of great honor into that Holy City. There will be no contamination whatsoever that will enter this New Jerusalem. Those gates of solid pearl are but another indication of the riches untold of our Almighty God. Nothing will defile that glorious city, for only those whose names are written in the Lamb's book of life, will have access into the city.

Within this Holy City there will be a New Temple, different from all ages. At present, we are the temple of God, with the Holy Spirit dwelling within us. But this new temple will be the Triune God. "And I saw No Temple in it, for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it" Rev.,21:22. This can be readily understood by those who have been redeemed by the blood of the Lamb. May I remind you of one of the controversies that Christ had with the

religious leaders of His time, concerning the temple in Jerusalem. The Jewish leaders asked for a sign from the Lord. "Jesus answered, and said unto them, Destroy this temple and in three days I will raise it up.....But He spoke of the temple of His body." Jn.2:19-21. This is nothing strange to us, for we have become temples of God through our faith. "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?" 1 Cor.3:15. These are important facts and are directly related to the New Jerusalem.

There is also another important feature about this New Jerusalem, with the Shikinah glory of God, there will be no need of electric lights. Not even the sun with all of its brightness will not out shine this new light. "And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it; for the glory of God did light it, and the Lamb is the lamp of it." Rev.21:23. There will be an eternal light from God, shine forth in that New Jerusalem, and will be sufficient light for the whole new world. Remember, this is not a mystical dream but is real, so do not try to spiritualize this truth away into the imaginary realm. It will be an actual bright and glorious Holy City, whose Builder and Maker is God. This New Jerusalem will be four square, measuring some 1,500 miles in every direction. This mighty structure of God will contain billion and eight hundred and seventy five cubic miles. This will be God's version of a massive city with tremendous light. Being related to the "Lamb's Wife", we may compare it to the "Bridal Chamber" for the Lamb's bride. All the saints of all ages will always be welcomed. Our commercial world has a high priority upon the precious metal of Gold, but we will be able to walk upon crystal pure gold. Sin and all evil forces will be banned forever and sealed off to themselves forever and ever! May I remind you of the key verse in the Bible, Daniel 9:24. Sin will have run its course and righteousness will permeate God's new heavens and earth.

THE NEW PARADISE

Water for life is so important in our lives and all creation demands it. I am certain that in this present Paradise in the heavenlies, there is an ample supply for all the saints as they wait for the Rapture to take place. The Lord Himself led captivity captive (Ps./68:18.), as He led the Old Testament Saints into the heavenly Paradise.

We know that the saints are there, for the Lord promised the thief on the cross that because he believed, he would arrive in Paradise. What we are studying at this time is the new Paradise that will come down from the Father of all creation. Remember that the presence of God be in His new creation and there will be no need of a physical temple. We are in the process of dealing with the new Paradise with streams of pure living water coming from the throne of God and of the Lamb. (Rev.22:1.) There are going to be special trees of life which will bring forth annually twelve types of different fruit. This fruit will not need to be sprayed for insects nor treated with compost, for God will be in charge. (Rev.22:3.) Not only will there be delicious fruit, but the leaves will be eatable. (Rev.22:2.) The nations of the new world will come to Paradise to get their supply of these leaves as their "Medii Care". All shall keep healthy, wealthy, and wise! The Lord Jesus Christ shall be there in person with His bride, and all shall enjoy His fellowship in the "Divine World Order". (Rev.22:4.)

Whatever we have enjoyed in this world, as children of God, it will never compare to God's new creation. God has described some wonders to come, but the ungodly refuse to believe that these things are possible. It is sometimes difficult for the saints of God to grasp the potential of

these marvelous revelations. Those of us who are senior citizens depend largely upon remembering the years of long ago. But God is revealing the secrets of things to come and giving us an insight into the eternal glories of the future. Regardless of your temporary aches and pains, stop and talk with God, thanking Him for the promise of all things new, where there shall be pleasures forever more. "And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away." Rev.21:4.

GOD'S LAST WRITTEN MESSAGE

There are several important statements from the Godhead through God the Holy Spirit. We need to mention a few of these before we finally close this textbook. We need to compare these statements with other portions of God's Word. In particular, we need to assimilate them into our daily Christian walk. Let us list some of these as we conclude this important study on the Book of Revelation. This will consolidate an important study of the eternal plan of God.

THE HIGH LIGHTS OF THE BOOK OF REVELATION

- 1. This Book deals primarily with things to come. (Rev.22:1; Rev.1:1.)**
- 2. God promises to come in the fullness of time, to fulfill what He has revealed, setting up His kingdom of righteousness. (Rev.22:7; Jn.14:1-6; 1 Thess.4:13-18; 1 Cor.15:51-57; Rev.19:11-21; Rev.22:12-13.)**
- 3. These truths are known in heaven by our fellow believers as well as the holy angels. (Rev.22:9-9; Rev.7:13-14.)**
- 4. The Book of Revelation is to be studied, in order for us to better understand the Books of Isaiah, Daniel, Ezekiel, and other portions predicting things to come. (Rev.22:10.)**
- 5. There will be a permanent separation between the just and the unjust, as God will seal off forever, the lake of fire with Satan and all of his demons, and all the unbelievers of all ages. (Rev.22:11; Rev.19:20; Rev.20:10; Rev.20:11-15.)**
- 6. A special blessing is granted unto those who have been washed in the blood of the Lamb. (Rev.22:14; Rev.22:4-5; 1 Pet.1:18-19.)**
- 7. The wicked will be forever separated from the righteous and sealed off in the eternal lake of fire. (Rev.22:15; Rev.20:15.)**
- 8. These messages in the Book of Revelation have been especially sent to the churches. Jesus Christ is declared the Messiah of the root of Jesse, and offspring of David,**

through the Incarnation of the Eternal Son of God. Christ, being, the bright and morning star. (Rev.22:16; 1 Chron.17:11-13; 2 Sam.7:16,24; 1 Ki.8:23.)

- 9. There is a welcome to whosoever will may come and be delivered from God's wrath to come. We who are of the Royal Household of Faith will become the bride of Christ, having been born of God the Holy Spirit. We bare witness to these things, welcoming others to accept the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal Savior. (Rev.22:17.)**
- 10. There is also a warning to all who would add to or take away from this Book of Revelation. Their punishment will be very severe, as God will pour out His wrath upon such. (Rev.22:18-19.)**

CONCLUSION

As this study of the conflict of the ages comes to a close, we hope that we have encouraged each of you to continue to study the Biblical prophecies. We have barely touched the great vault of information in the Bible. We are now aware, more so than ever before of that great battle between Satan and Almighty God. We know what the outcome will be, for the Eternal kingdom of righteousness will have the victory. The evil forces, though they are great have lost the battle at the cross of Calvary. Their sentences to the eternal separation from God with His eternal wrath upon them is still pending. God has His set time for everything to be accomplished, bringing in everlasting righteousness. God who is from everlasting to everlasting is not limited to time.

God has provided us with sufficient armament, plus God the Holy Spirit to withstand the fiery darts of Satan. "Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against power, against the rulers of darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." Eph.6:11-12.

God has thoroughly enlightened us concerning the things that will come in these last days. There is no reason why we should flounder about, not knowing what the future holds. When the Rapture takes place, and we see the Lord face to face, we will be like Him in our glorified bodies. With God the Holy Spirit living within us, we are made ready for that Divine glorification. That will be a marvelous day when the Lord takes the kingdoms of this world from Satan and makes them the kingdom of God. God has given all authority to His Eternal Son, and every knee will bow before Him and every tongue will confess that He is the Eternal Son of God.

Until then, the Bible tells us what we can expect in these last days. There will be a continuation of wars and rumors of wars, earthquakes, floods, drought, and perilous times will come. Israel, as a nation will face her final judgement from God during the great tribulation. Praise God, the saints of all ages prior to the Rapture will receive their glorified bodies. We will be delivered **"out from" the wrath to come.** 1 Thess.1:10. All wood, hay, and stubble will be removed from our lives, and we will receive our rewards for faithfulness. Those seven years in heaven after the Rapture will be precious years, feasting upon the goodness of God.

All battles will be over for us in our heavenly home as we begin to enjoy God's "Utopia". I pray that every student and reader if these Biblical textbooks know the Lord Jesus Christ as their personal Savior. If you have not accepted Him as your personal Savior, do so now! "Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." Jn.14:6. "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on Him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into judgement, but is passed from death unto life" Jn.5:24. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through His Name." Jn.20:31.

God is long-suffering and does not wish that one soul should perish and for that reason if none other, He was willing to send His only Begotten Son, to pay the debt of our sins. You have the choice, "For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ, our Lord." Rom.6:23. God is waiting for you to settle this issue once and forever. You may know the Lord as your Savior, but have allowed the world, the flesh and the devil to control your life. Get right with God immediately! God has room for us all and has never limited His atonement. "But as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the children of God, even to them that believe on His name; who were born, not of blood, nor the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God." Jn.1:12-13. For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved." Jn.3:17. He who testifieth of these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so come Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen. Rev. 22:20-21.

Faithfully written for God's glory.

Rev.Dr.Andrew J.Losier

**Christian Literature & Bible Center Inc.,
Toccoa, Georgia 30577, U.S. America**

QUESTIONS: CHAPTER SEVEN

- 1. Write an essay on, "The Necessity of A New Creation".**
- 2. What key verse do you find in the Bible, showing God's eternal plan?**
- 3. Give seven ages in which God is dealing with mankind. Give Scripture.**
- 4. Does God have several ways in which mankind can be saved? Give Scripture.**
- 5. Give the judgements that will take place from the second advent of Christ until the New creation. Give Scripture.**
- 6. What will be the final judgement against all unbelievers? Give Scripture.**
- 7. Explain the difference between, "The Day of Christ" and "The Day of the Lord." Give Scripture.**
- 8. How many resurrections will there be? Give Scripture.**
- 9. Write an essay on, "The Second Living Death".**
- 10. How will God destroy the first heavens and the first earth? Scripture.**
- 11. Give 7 reasons why the heavens and the earth must be destroyed. Give Scripture.**
- 12. What will God's method be, in the destruction of the old heavens and the old earth? Give Scripture.**
- 13. Give Scripture of God's promise that He will make all things new.**
- 14. Write an essay on "God's Sovereignty".**
- 15. How can we know the perfect will of God?**
- 16. What does God have planned for eternity? Give Scripture.**
- 17. What is God's supreme purpose in His new creation? Give Scripture.**
- 18. Name 13 benefits that believers will get. Give Scripture.**
- 19. Will there be a present heaven that will remain the same? Scripture.**

-
- 20. Will anybody be saved during the great tribulation? Scripture.**
 - 21. Explain "The New Jerusalem" and "The Lamb's Wife". Scripture**
 - 22. Explain "New Paradise" Give Scripture.**
 - 23. Give 10 last messages of God from the Revelation 22:6-21.**

In the beginning

Was the Word, and the Word was with GOD
and the Word was GOD

JOHN 1:1

Eternity Past

THE ABSOLUTE GOD
THE ABSOLUTE PLAN
DAN. 9:24

God - THE FATHER planned it,
JOHN 10:15-18 : HEB. 10:5b

God - THE SON provided it,
JOHN 10:17

God - THE HOLY SPIRIT proved it.
1 COR. 12:13

THE ABSOLUTE BLUEPRINT
to achieve a PERFECT
ETERNAL PARADISE-
FREE FROM EVIL
throughout Eternity to come,
based on the Word of GOD

God created the
Heaven and the
Earth
GEN. 1:1 : PSALM 19:1

The creation of the Angels

and the realm of their habitation

LUCIFER (Highest Position) ISA. 14:12; EZEK. 28:12-15

MICHAEL (Arch Angel)

GABRIEL (Mighty Angel) well informed

CELESTIAL CREATURES

endowed with a choice

•CHERUBIM (Defenders)

•SERAPHIM (Worship)

•LIVING CREATURES

(Glorious Majesty)

•ANGELIC HOST

(Innumerable)

Restored Earth
Six day creation

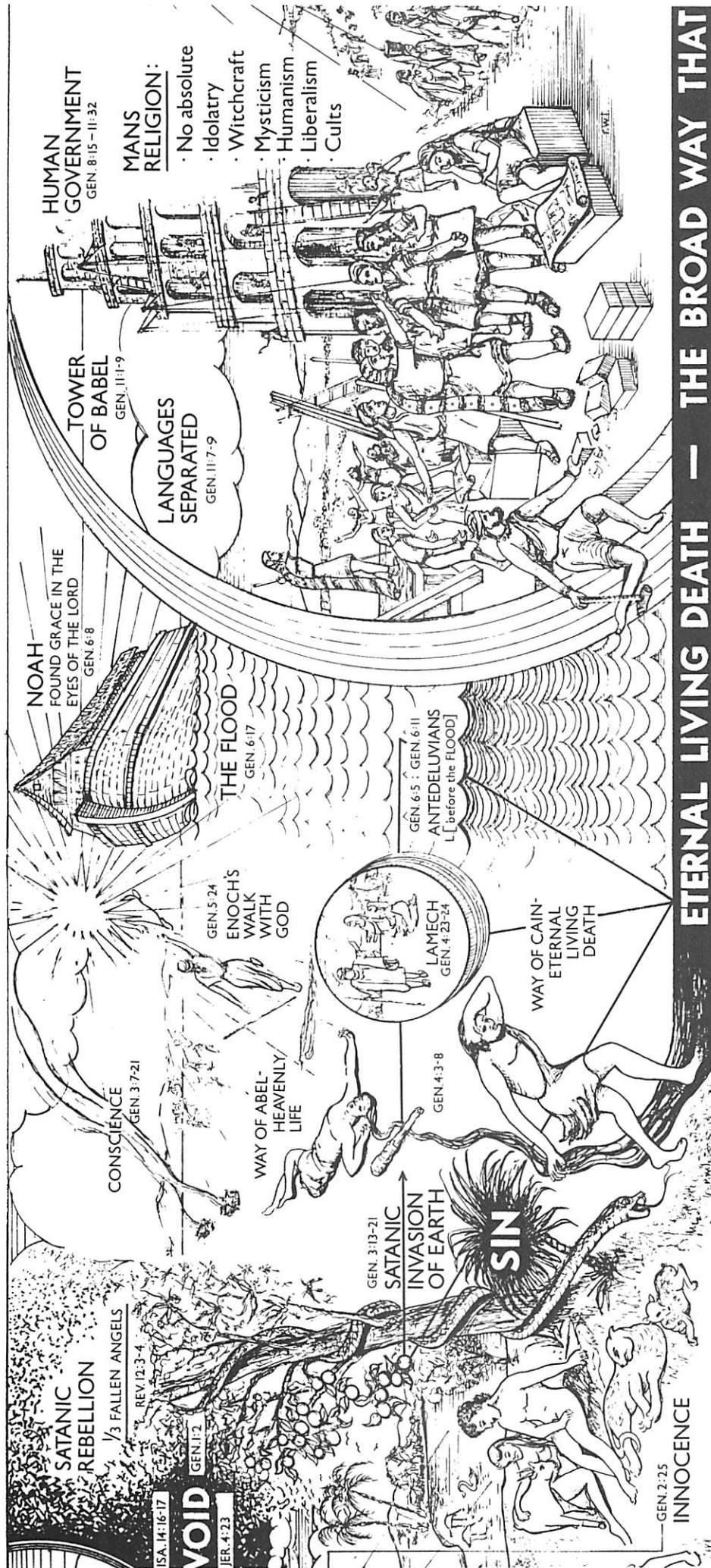
GARDEN
OF EDEN

GOD'S PLAN OF ALL AGES
by REV. DR. ANDREW J. LOSIER
Scroll graphics and illustrations by Raymond W. Losier — Copyright pending 1986

©Jupiter Printing Inc., Jupiter, Fla., U.S.A.®

The following pages have been perforated and printed on one side only for those who wish to remove the God's Plan of All Ages Chart and assemble it on a wall or into a scroll.

NOT TO BE SOLD



ETERNAL LIVING DEATH — THE BROAD WAY THAT



God

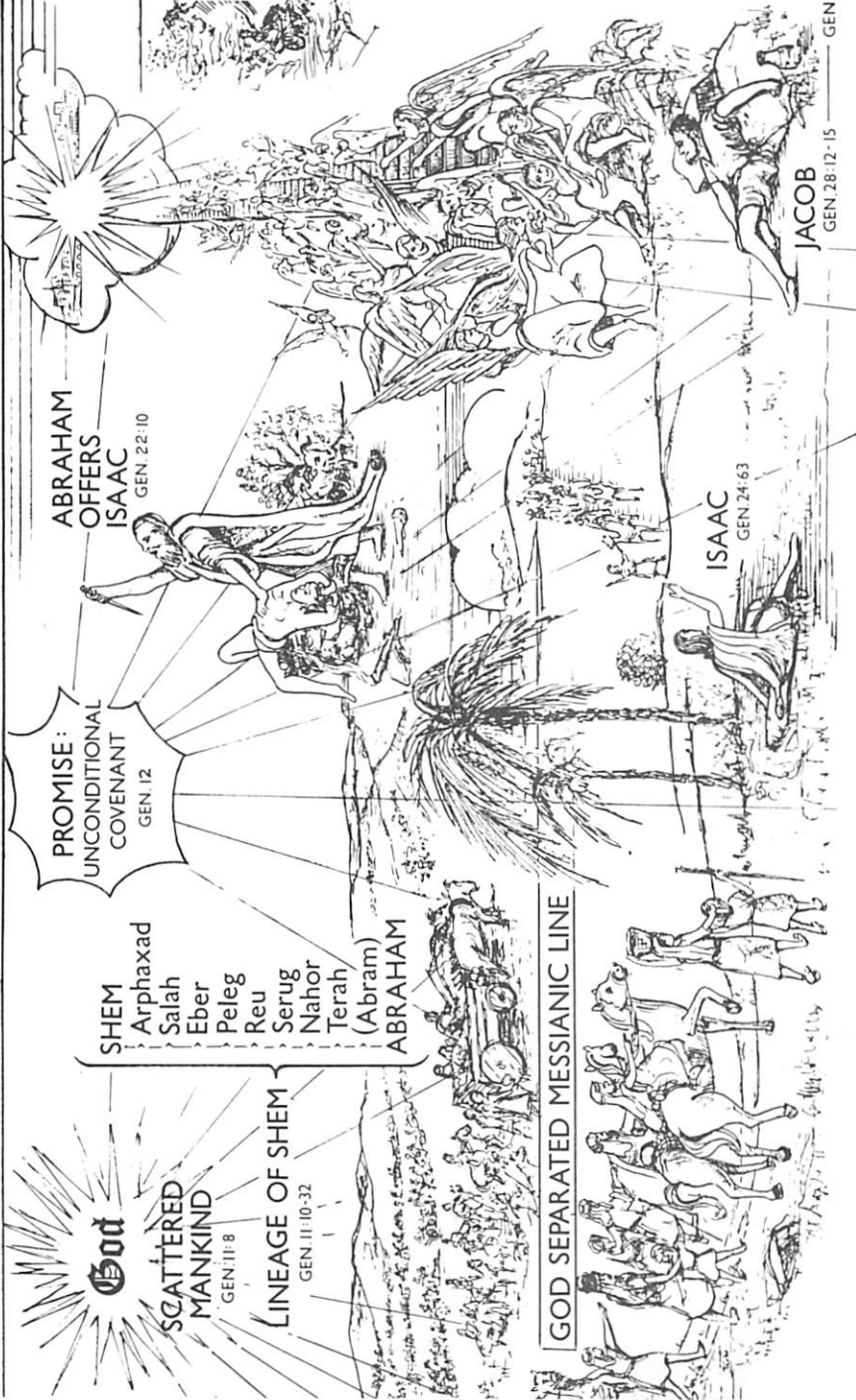
SCATTERED MANKIND

GEN 11:8

LINEAGE OF SHEM

GEN 11:10-32

- SHEM
- Arphaxad
- Salah
- Eber
- Peleg
- Reu
- Serug
- Nahor
- Terah
- (Abram)
- ABRAHAM



ABRAHAM OFFERS ISAAC

GEN 22:10

PROMISE: UNCONDITIONAL COVENANT

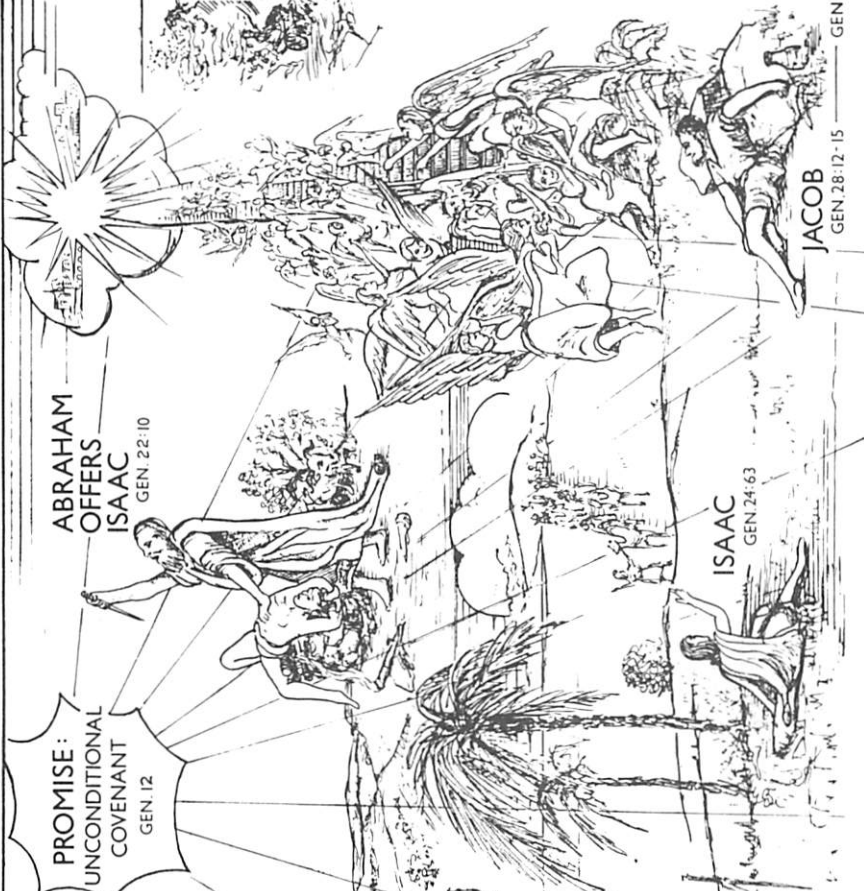
GEN 12

GOD SEPARATED MESSIANIC LINE



ISAAC

GEN 24:63



JACOB

GEN 28:12-15



JACOB'S prophetic declaration to his sons.

GEN. 49:3-28

- REUBEN
- SIMEON
- LEVI
- JUDAH*
- ZEBULUN
- ISSACHAR
- DAN
- GAD
- ASHER
- NAPHTALI
- JOSEPH
- BENJAMIN

(The twelve tribes of ISRAEL)



MOSES CROSSES THE RED SEA

EXODUS 14:26-31



JACOB/ISRAEL

GEN. 32:28

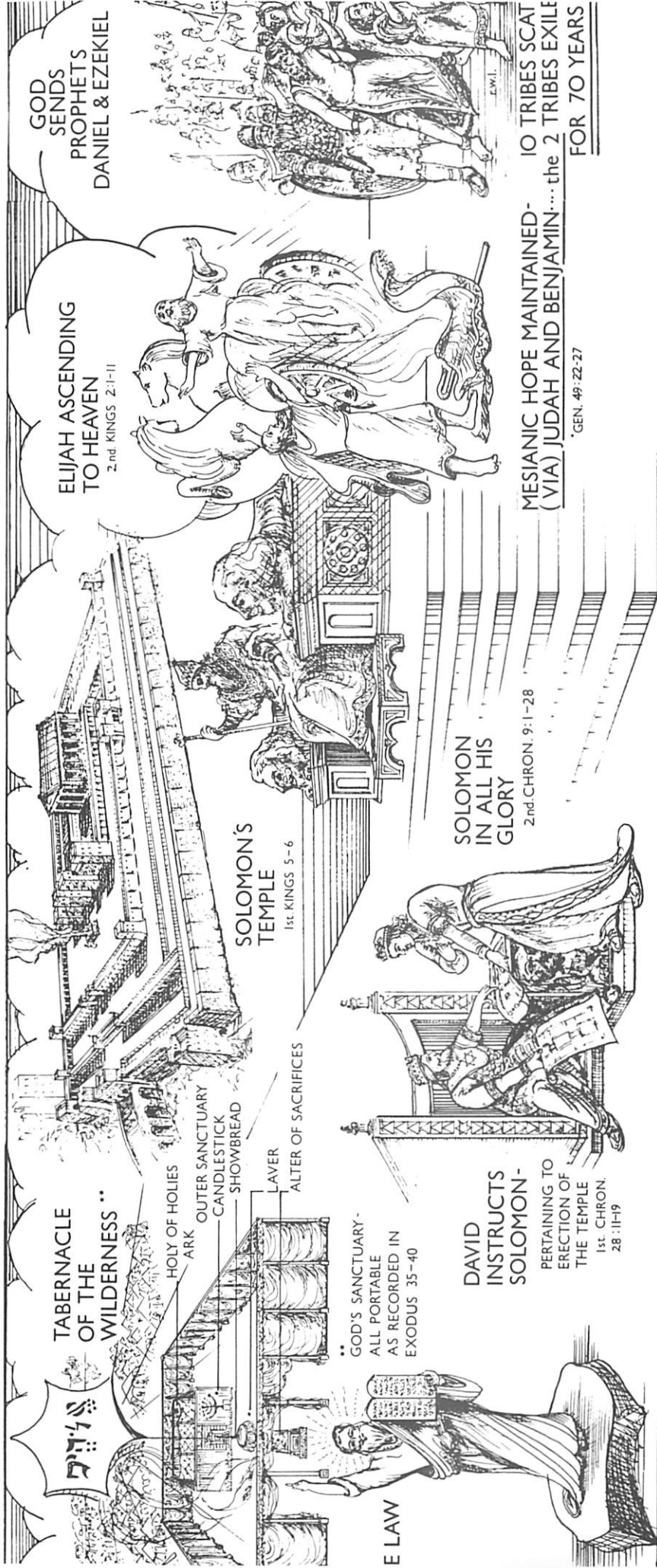
MOSES GIVING OF THE

EXODUS 35:1

LEADS TO DESTRUCTION

.....

GAL. 5:19-21; ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS



TABERNACLE
OF THE
WILDERNESS ..

HOLY OF HOLIES
ARK
OUTER SANCTUARY
CANDLESTICK
SHOWBREAD
LAVER
ALTER OF SACRIFICES

GOD'S SANCTUARY -
ALL PORTABLE
AS RECORDED IN
EXODUS 35-40

E LAW

DAVID
INSTRUCTS
SOLOMON -

PERTAINING TO
ERECTION OF
THE TEMPLE
1st. CHRON.
28 : 11-19

SOLOMON'S
TEMPLE
1st. KINGS 5-6

SOLOMON
IN ALL HIS
GLORY
2nd. CHRON. 9 : 1-28

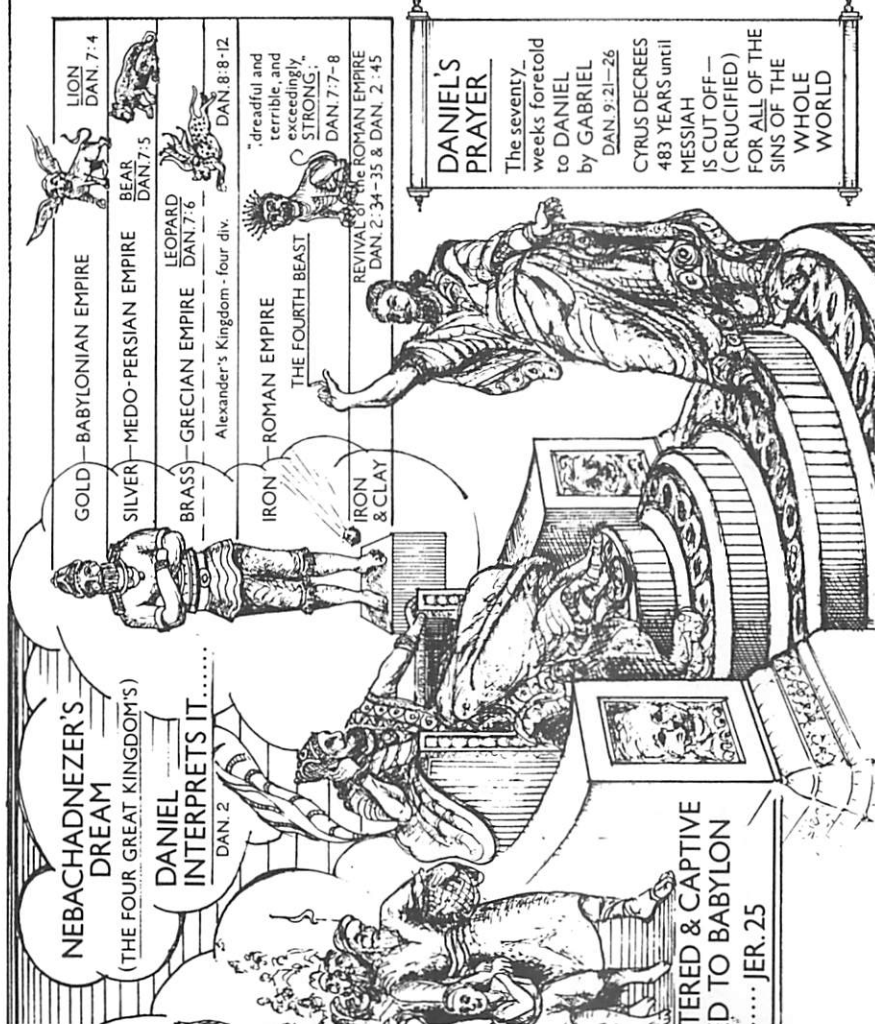
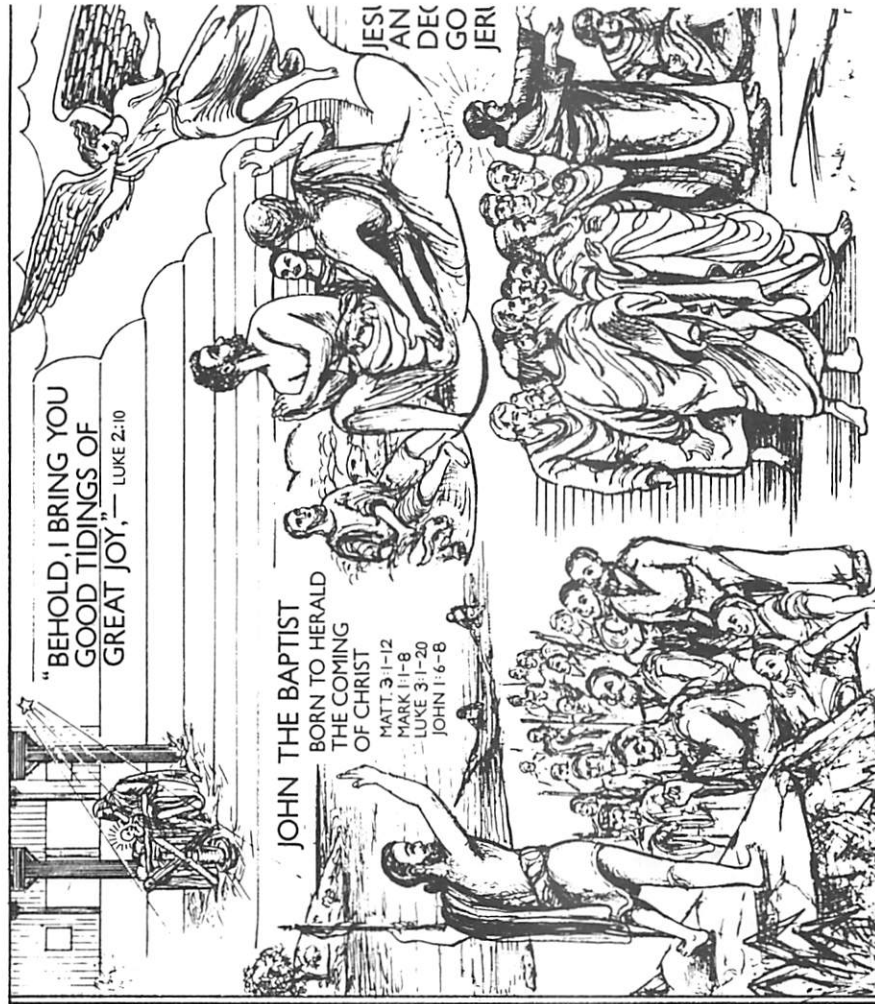
ELIJAH ASCENDING
TO HEAVEN
2nd. KINGS 2:1-11

GOD
SENDS
PROPHETS
DANIEL & EZEKIEL

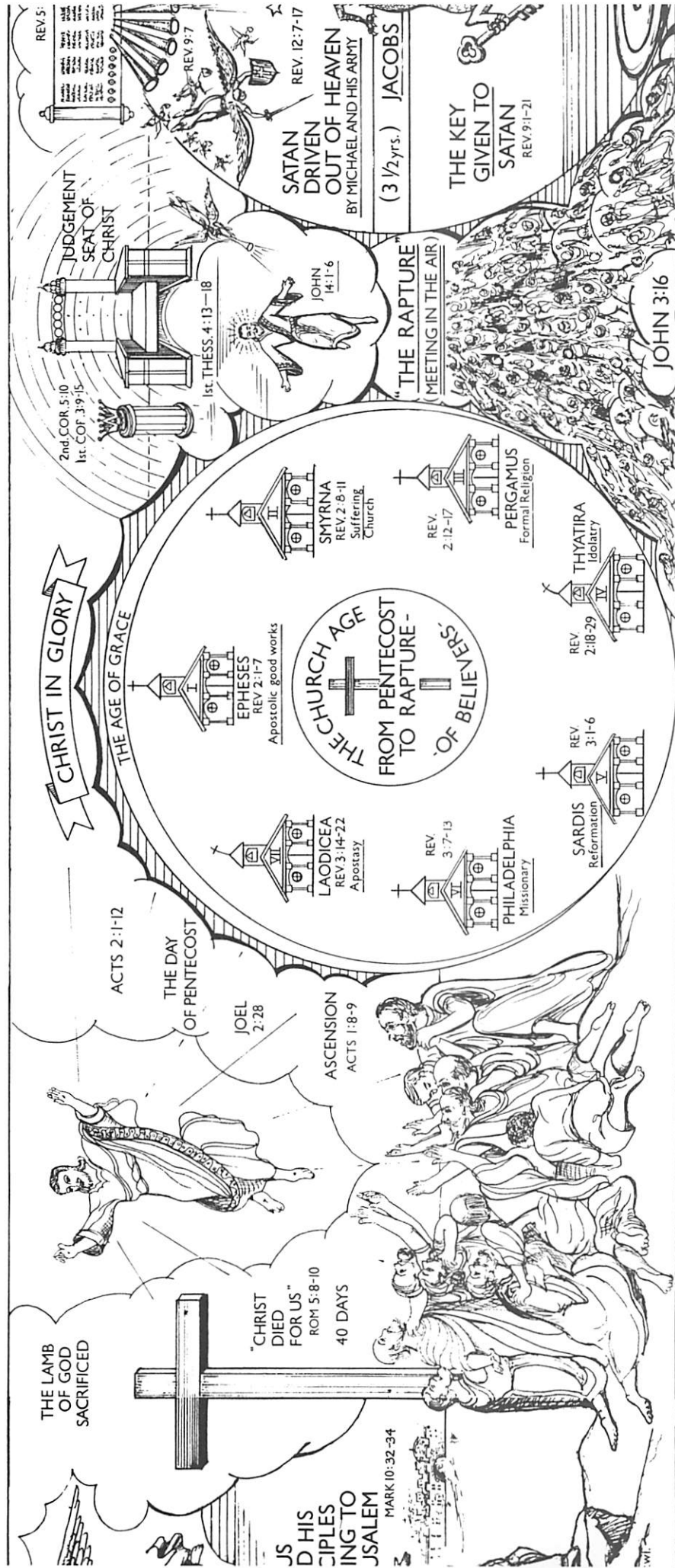
MESIANIC HOPE MAINTAINED -
(VIA) JUDAH AND BENJAMIN.... the 2 TRIBES EXILE
FOR 70 YEARS
* GEN. 49 : 22-27

10 TRIBES SCAT
the 2 TRIBES EXILE
FOR 70 YEARS

ESS, LASCIVIOUSNESS, IDOLATRY, SORCERY, HATRED, STRIFE, JEALOUSY,



WRATH, FACTIONS, SEDITIONS, HERESIES, ENVYINGS, MURDERS, ETC. T



HE REJECTION OF CHRIST AS THE ETERNAL SON OF GOD

MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB OF GOD
REV. 19:7

THE MARRIAGE SUPPER
REV. 19:17

ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION
MATT. 24:15

MYSTERY BABYLON
REV. 17:1-18
REV. 18:1-24

TROUBLE (3 1/2 yrs.)

THE GREAT TRIBULATION
(70th. - Seven)

OF DANIEL
9:24
9:26,27

THE BEAST & FALSE PROPHET

CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE

REV. 19:20

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST RETURNS TO REIGN OVER HIS

(RIGHTEOUS) KINGDOM ON EARTH

1st. THESS. 3:13 : REV. 11:15
REV. 19:11-21 : ISAIAH 40:10

HEAVENLY RIGHTEOUSNESS COMING DOWN UPON THE EARTH

"Thy Kingdom come,
Thy will be done
ON EARTH,
as it is in
HEAVEN,"
MATT. 6:10

1000 YEAR KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED
REV. 20:6

MOUNT OF OLIVET

NATURE RESTORED
ISAIAH 11:6-9

THE SAINTS SHALL TEACH GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS
REV. 5:10
LIFE SPAN EXTENDED
ISA. 65:20

SATAN CAST INTO THE BOTTOMLESS PIT FOR 1000 YEARS
REV. 20:1-3

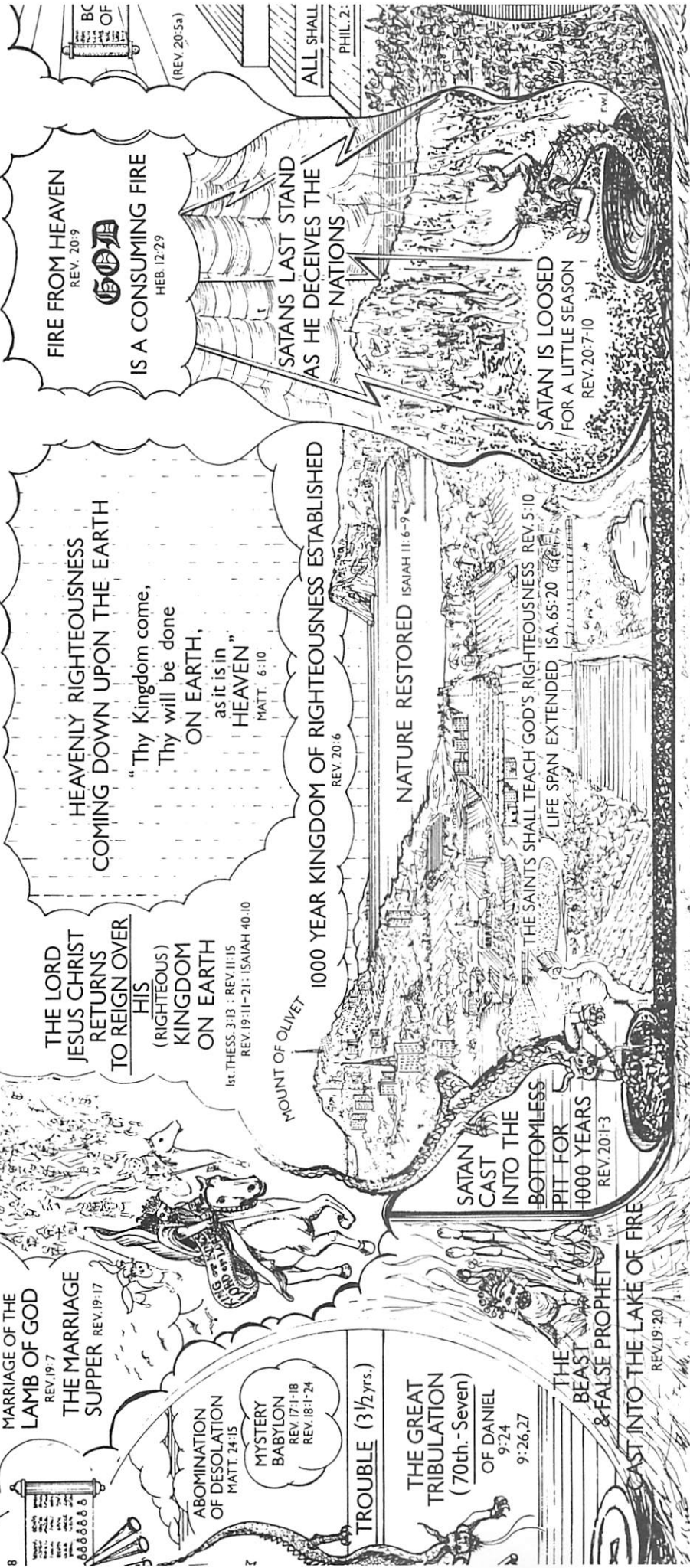
FIRE FROM HEAVEN
REV. 20:9

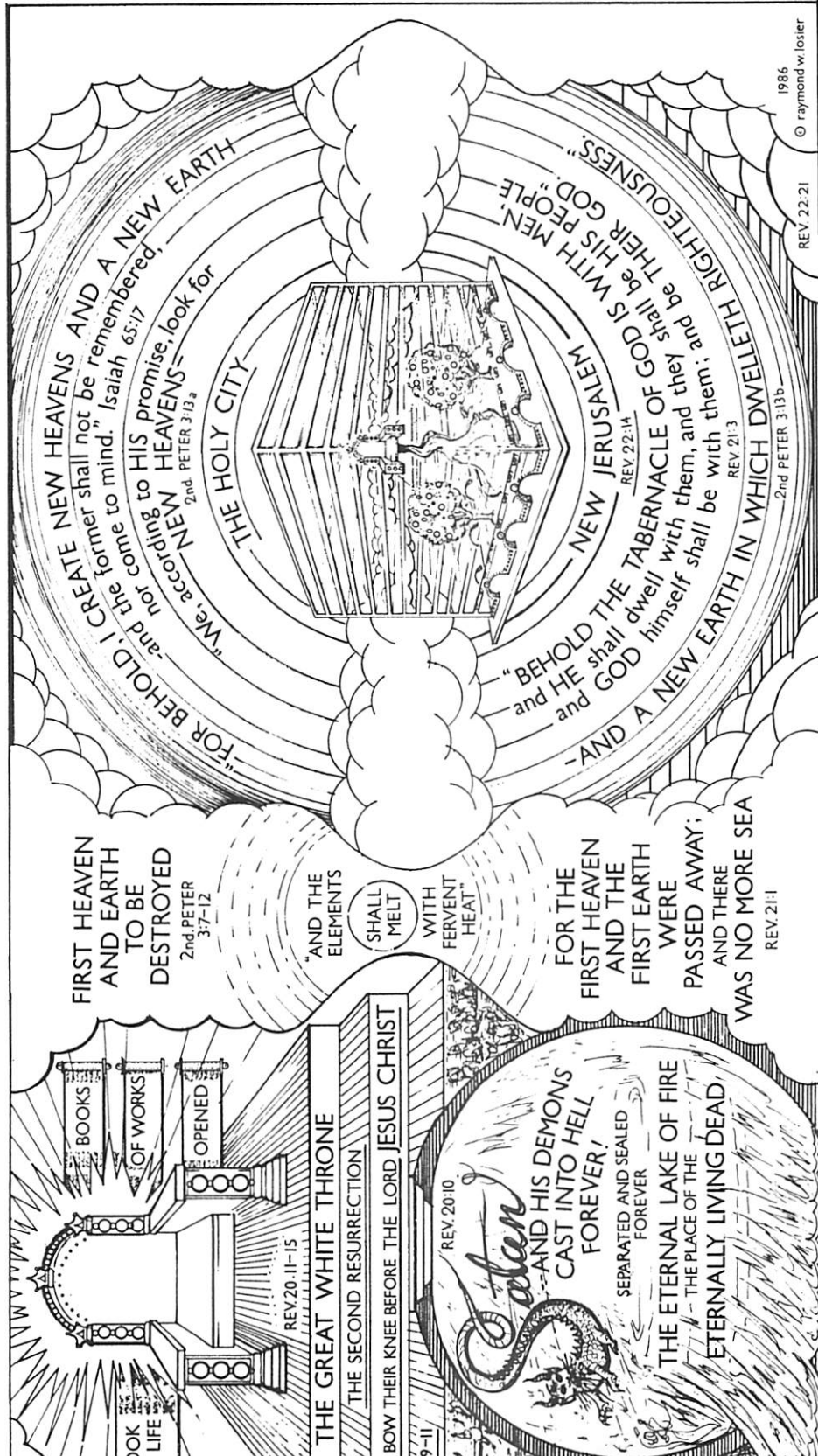


IS A CONSUMING FIRE
HEB. 12:29

SATAN'S LAST STAND AS HE DECEIVES THE NATIONS

SATAN IS LOOSED FOR A LITTLE SEASON
REV. 20:7-10





FIRST HEAVEN
AND EARTH
TO BE
DESTROYED
2nd PETER
3:7-12

"AND THE
ELEMENTS
(SHALL
MELT
WITH
FERVENT
HEAT"

FOR THE
FIRST HEAVEN
AND THE
FIRST EARTH
WERE
PASSED AWAY;
AND THERE
WAS NO MORE SEA
REV 21:1

BOOKS
OF WORKS
OPENED
REV 20:11-15
DO NOT
LIFE

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE
THE SECOND RESURRECTION
BOW THEIR KNEE BEFORE THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
9-11

REV 20:10
AND HIS DEMONS
CAST INTO HELL
FOREVER!
SEPARATED AND SEALED
FOREVER
THE ETERNAL LAKE OF FIRE
THE PLACE OF THE
ETERNALLY LIVING DEAD

"FOR BEHOLD, I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH
and the former shall not be remembered,
nor come to mind." Isaiah 65:17
"We, according to HIS promise, look for
NEW HEAVENS, look for
THE HOLY CITY
2nd PETER 3:13a

NEW JERUSALEM
REV 22:14
"BEHOLD THE TABERNACLE OF GOD IS WITH MEN,
and HE shall dwell with them, and they shall be HIS PEOPLE
and GOD himself shall be with them; and be THEIR GOD."
REV 21:3
-AND A NEW EARTH IN WHICH DWELLETH RIGHTEOUSNESS-
2nd PETER 3:13b